

THE
Troublesome and Hard
ADVENTURES
IN
LOVE.

Lively setting forth,
The Feavers, the Dangers, and the Jealousies of Lovers; and the Labyrinths and Wildernesses of Fears and Hopes through which they daily passe.

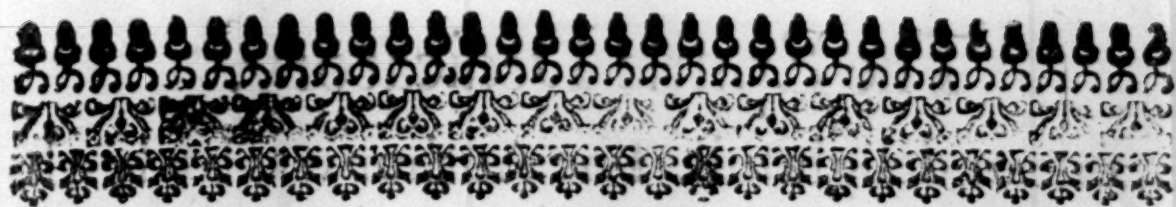
ILLUSTRATED
By many admirable Patterns of Heroical Resolutions in some persons of Chivalry and Honour; and by the Examples of incomparable Perfections in some
LADIES.

A Work very Delightfull and Acceptable
to All.

Written in Spanish, by that Excellent and Famous Gentleman, Michael Cervantes; And exactly Translated into English,

By R. C. Gent.

London; Printed by B. Alsop, dwelling in Grubstreet
near the upper Pump. 1652.



To the Munificent Lover of all Ingenious Spirits, The Right Honourable, and most Noble,

JAMES EARL of Northampton, &c.

My LORD.

Have read that great Princes have stooped so low from the height of their power, that they have vouchsafed their Princely favour to the most abject of their people, & gratefully received a few drops of fair water from the palm of a poor mans hand; which act of royal acceptance and respect, hath more enobled their names unto posterity, than all their deeds of victorious Chivalry and Magnificence. The Consideration of this hath imboldned me to prefer these papers to your Honours acceptance and protection. The subject is but light, for it treats of love; but so interwoven with stories of heroical resolution, & examples of high perfection that you can read nothing in this nature more profitable

The Epistle Dedicatory.

fitable or delightfull. The Author was by birth a Spaniard, the same Gentleman that composed *Guzman de Alfarache*, and the second part of *Don Quixot*, who in all his writings hath made it as much his study as his mirth, to represent and deride the vanity of those bold inventors, whose wild glory it hath been, not onely to impose upon, but to torment the imaginations of their readers; and instead of possibilities to fill their fables and the world, with Gyants and with Monsters.

The Spaniard (I know not by what fate) is more happy in his prose then in his verse, whether his *Cuentas* cannot so well be taught to run in numbers, or whether the *Genius* of that Nation is more promptly inclined to expresse it self in Prose then in Verse. Howsoever though he differs in the manner, yet he agrees in the substance, for as the incomparable Sir Philip Sidney truly observes, it is not the rime but the invention that crowns the Poet, and verse doth no more make a Poet, then a gown doth a Lawyer. The piece in the Original is dedicated to one of the *Grandeas* in Spain, and of the Pri-

The Epistle Dedicatory.

vy Councel to the King, which hath more incouraged me, to present it to your Lordship in the translation. And though there is no man a more absolute master of his passion then your Lordship, and therefore cannot properly be said, to be subject unto love, yet it shal be no dishonor to you to be a lover of the Muses, and to accept these their flowers into your protection; flowers they are, but so sweetly violent, that as their beauties may arrest all eyes, so I doubt not but their perfume through many ages wil continue to testifie unto the world the influence of your protection, and the most gratefull resentments of him who is

(My Lord)

Your Honours most hum-

ble and devoted Servant.

R. C.



The Printer to the Reader.



Ourteous Reader, this work comming to my hands by chance I published, hoping that some might be delighted with the reading thereof. How worthy or unworthy it is to be joynt-heir with the fine-born children of this our-Age, I leave to your censures, keeping mine own judgement within the compass of my brest. Yet thus much the condition and quality of the Author emboldeneth me to say, That he being as much a Merchant, as a Schollar, and a Traveller, as a Courtier, it seemeth that the Subject of his writings is as pleasant as the Forme; and the Matter as delightfull as the Manner. And knowing that some men conceive more pleasure in the substance of Histories, either Politick or Amorous, then in the flourish of words, I was the more encouraged to blaze this work to the light, wherein many Histories are recorded; among which, though some are inserted that have been written by others before, yet were never scene in English till now. See them and use them at pleasure.

Farewel, B.A.



The Troublesome and Hard
ADVENTURES
IN
LOVE.

CHAP. I.

How the Emperour *Nero* sent to demand the daughters of *Camillo* for his Concubines, and what happened thereupon.



In the famous City of Mantua, at that time that Nero (whose cruelty hath made the world to admire his manners) was Emperour of Rome, dwelt an old knight named Camillo, no lesse adorned with vertue then favoured of fortune: who being about threescore and ten years old, was forced to lead a single life, his wife Paulina paying nature her due. This Camillo being thus dispossessed of his most wel-beloved Lady, with no lesse grief bewailed her death, then with pleasure he enjoyed her presence whilst she yet lived. But time the medicine of all sorrow, diminished his grief, the

The Troublesome and Hard

sooner by means of the unspeakable pleasure which he took in viewing the perfections of his son Perierio, and his two daughters Euphilia and Perina; which Gentlewomen for their singular vertues and extreame beauty, were of the Citizens of Mantua worthily termed the sepulchres and tombs of their mother Paulinas graces and perfections, all Mantua judging that all the gifts both of fortune, nature, & the mind, wherewith Paulina was indued in her life time, were buried and intombed in her two daughters: neither was Perierio lesse famous in respect of vertuous conditions then his sisters, he being adozned with most excellent qualities, and inferiour to no man both in perfection of body and subtilty of wit.

Thus Camillo rejoycing that he was the father of such children, therein thinking himself to be most happy, lived with as great contentment as any man might do. But Fortune (whose favours are but seldome continuall) grudging at his felicity, intended to try whether he could as patiently suffer adversity in his latter years, as he being younger had virtuously behaved himself in prosperity.

For Nero the Emperour, being informed of his wicked companions, in whose flattery he took pleasure, that Camillo had two daughters in beauty surpassing natures cunning, and in perfection of body resembling the Goddess Venus, incontinently sent a Letter unto old Camillo, by two of his Noble men, being written after this manner,

Nero Governour of the world, to Camillo.

Friend Camillo, (for so much I account thee to be, in that thou art my subject.) These are to give you notice, how that the rare beauty of thy two daughters *Euphilia* and *Perina*, being bewrayed unto the world by the report of fame, and made known unto me by the relation of my noble men, I judged them too worthy to be joyned in marriage to any man of lower estate then a King. And therefore I command thee to send both thy daughters to the Court, where neither the one nor the other shall be Empresse,

Adventures in Love.

but both of them the Paramours and Concubines of an Emperour.
Farewell.

This letter was with all speed by the said said Noblemen delivered unto Camillo, who unclosing the same, and breaking up the seal, soon read that which was sufficient to break his heart in pieces, and work his death, had not his destinies reserved him to defend his daughters honesty, and free them from the tyrants outrageous lust, through his sage counsel, and politick deliberation. So that having read the Letters, after he had something meditated upon the contents thereof, he gave the Noblemen answer, that for as much as hee being a widower could not live being separated from his two daughters and his sonne Pererio, he would with his sonne accompany them to the Court, there doing his Majesty such service as it might please him to command, expecting the day of his departure out of this world, leaving not his daughters onely but his son also at his Majesties pleasure. But to the end that he might take order for the preparation of his journey, and provide such necessaries as were expedient for him, his son and his daughters, he desired them to obtain of his Majesty but the space of one moneth, which expired, he would without all doubt be at the Court with his children. The Noblemen finding old Camillo so ready to pleasure Nero the Emperour, promised him to do what they might, and so departed. But Camillo calling his son Pererio, with his daughters Euphilia and Perina to him, sending a world of tears from his eyes, which distilling along his pale cheeks streamed on his silver hairs, and fetching a long sigh from the innermost part his heart said unto them.

Ah Pererio, ah Euphilia, ah Perina, ah my loving children, in whose prosperity consisteth all my hope, yea in whose felicity my life is harboured, insomuch, that through the increase of your honourable vertues, I have enlarged the term of my life; and now, seeing that Fate or Fortune doth threaten your dishonour, I doubt not but that I shall be overcome by grief

The Troublesome and Hard

to end my aged days, and with a tragical and mournfull death shut up all those happy and blessed hours which the Gods have hitherto granted me. We have heard the Tyrants will, ye know his lust, and likewise ye are not ignorant, what shame, what infamy, what dishonour that would be, not onely to you two, Euphilia and Perina, but also unto me, unto your Brother, yea unto all the line and stock of our race and kindred. What answer I have made the Noble-men, is not unknown to any of you. But as I do not mean to be found as good as my word in the least point of all that which I have promised them, so I am of opinion that ye cannot beleve etherwise, but that my tongue spake further then it had command from my heart, and that my lips pronounced that which was not in my breast concluded. But loving children, where Lust is a Lord, & Wyot ruleth, equity and justice is expelled: and where a Tyrant governeth, all is Law that he doth like. Wherefore fearing lest contradiction and denial might be cause of our disgrace, I stuffed the Tyrants Messengers with such a pleasing and soothing answer. But to be short know, loving children, that I had rather that we should all agree to die one death, then to condescend unto the Tyrants outrageous and libidinous desire.

Pericio having heard his Fathers noble resolution, wondering that such courage harboured in his breast he being a man of such an aged life, considering that old men are commonly deprived of natural heat, and so become cold, fearfull, and void of all herotical vertues; amazed therefore at his fathers vertue and rejoycing that he was the son of such a father, answered him in this manner. Father, the extreame sorrow which I conceived by reason of Nero his hainous intent to disgrace us with the spot of infamy, in demanding my sisters to deflower them, and make a prey of their chastities no doubt had smothered my heart and stopped my sences, not suffering me to utter one word, had not the joy which your noble vertue and valiant courage worketh in me, gotten the superiority, and freed me from the excessive injury of sorrow. Therefore if
it

Adventures in Love.

it would please the Gods to be so gracious unto us, that we might escape the imminent ruine and fall of our honour, I for my part am ready to resign not onely my liberty, but also my life, and with ransome of the cruellest death that man may ex-cogitate, redæm the honour of our linage and progeny.

Pererio had no sooner declared his readinesse in agreeing to his fathers resolved will, but Euphilia (though by grief com-manded to keep silence) uttered forth these words.

Father, the Tyrant can rule the body, but not the mind, he may threaten us shame, dishonour, and disgrace, but shall not be able to accomplish or execute the least of his menaces. Towards fear the threatnings of those that would flye, were they threatned: but where courage displayeth his Ensigns, no mena-ces may approach. And therefore let the Tyrant do what he can; for his power is not sufficient to dishonour our kindred by threatening us disgrace, for that we neither fear him, nor all his torments. For death, which the Gods have appointed, a fearfull token to most men to warn them to leave their worldly pleasures, and to resign their vital breath is unto us a most sweet and pleasant object, and yieldeth us comfort, being the onely mean by which we may escape infamy and shame. Death therefore shall free us from the Tyrants intended villany, and redæm our kindred from disgrace.

Perina, glad that her sister concluded so well to her liking, said.

Father, seeing then that (as my sister hath well declared) death must be our redæmer, I beseech you not to torment your old age with anxietie and grief for us: and you brother, though we die, may passe your youth in pleasing rest. And therefore let my sister and me care for this matter, which toucheth us onely, and fear not that by means of our cowardise ye shall reape any dishonour. And seeing that of two evils the least must be chosen, and the greatest avoided, let me perswade you to look to your selves and avoid the Tyrants anger, which ye are sure to incur, if you resist his will, and obey not his com-mand, accomplishing your promise made unto his Messen-

The Troublesome and Hard

gers. Therefore Father send us, and wizing your self from Fortunes wrong: consider your age, which requireth rest: take your delight, comfort your self with the presence of my brother Pericio, in viewing whose vertues and perfections you may easily forget us, though we were Goddesses and not mortal maids. So shall both you and my brother escape danger, and my sister and I gain honour and renown. For we fear not the Tyrant; he may tyrannize where he can for our hearts (which will never yeeld to vice) are of too noble a disposition to be conquered by him that is overcome by his own lusts and libidinous affections. To be short, know, that neither the Tyrant nor all his menaces shall be able to conquer us, seeing that we have death tied at our girdles which shall in spight of all the Tyrants of the world ransome us from dishonour.

Old Camillo seeing that his son and both his daughters were endued with such an haughtie and valiant mind as a man that had forgotten all occasion of sorrow, with a pleasant countenance replied.

Most haughtie Euphilia, and couragious Perina, I have followed your counsels, and as you see put off all sorrow: Now therefore attentively hear my counsel, and prepare your selves to put it in execution. My intent is such, that if ye die, your brother and I will not live till morn; let us therefore disguise our selves, and to morrow morning depart from Mantua before day. The Gods will favour us, and deliver us from Nero his hands, seeing that we (as our consciences witnesse) to free their sacred constitutions from violence, have left our possessions, lands, castle and substance, committing our selves to fortunes mercy, which is meer cruelty. But if our flight be so unhappie that we be overtaken by the Tyrant, then as we hoped all to live can we all but die: and seeing we cannot live the one without the other, let us all live together, or all die together. These hoarie hairs of mine, are messengers of death, and warn me to prepare my self for the grave: but your golden locks, and the glozy of your youth forbiddeth death to approach, and shall then ye be ready to die, and I that stand with
one

Adventures in Love

one foot in my grave flie from him whom I cannot over-run?
Po no, loving childzen I seek not to live but to have you live,
and therefore yeeld to my request, and live with me, if ye will
not have me die with you,

CHAP. II.

How *Camillo*, with his Son *Perierio*, and his two daughters, *Euphilia* and *Perina*, fled out of Mantua into Spain, to escape the tury of the Tyrant *Nero*, where they became shepheards: Also how *Perierio* became enamoured on a strange Lady,



Uphilia and Perina, hearing that their Father was so desirous to abandon all his livings for their cause, fell down on their knees before his feet, and prayed him to command them to do whatsoever he pleased, and they would be most readie to execute his pleasure. Camillo therefore taking them up by the hand, willed them to prepare themselves to depart from Mantua with him and Perierio the next morning, taking their best Jewels with them, and all their readie Gold. Camillo cloathed himself like a Shepheard, and Perierio (lest his father should be known) played the Barber, and shaved his beard clean off to the chin: and apparelled himself like a Butchers boy, Euphilia and Perina, (whose beauty and favour was such as could not but be known) scarce able all night to imagine how they might disguise themselves in such manner that they might passe unknown, at last concluded to cloath themselves like Market-women, and seeing the wind blew something strongly, they thereby took occasion to muffle their faces with their handkerchiefs, as if they had the toothach. Thus the old shepheard, young butcher, and muffled Market-women, were so cunningly disguised, that no man thought so much as to dream, that they should be Sir Camillo, with his son and his daughters. So that they passed not onely through the City but the Country also, unknown to any man, Nei-
ther

The Troublesome and Hard

ther did they rest untill they were so far from Mantua that they thought themselves to be out of danger. Yet they durst not stay in any place of Italy, for fear least search being made after them they might fall into the tyrants hands: and therefore travelled on dailly till they came into Spain, and there in a solitary place where no kind of people but shepherds did resort they built a pretty house, and bought a flock of sheep, determining to live shepherds untill such time as the Gods and their fortune would suffer them to return to their country.

These shepherds had not dwelt in their new built house the space of six moneths or thereabout, but they had perfectly learned to understand and speak the Castilian tongue, in so much that the same language was as easie unto them as their own. For there being but little difference betwixt the Italian and Spanish tongues (which are of near affinity,) and these noble shepherds being wonderfull witty and ingenious, it could not be but that they should in short space apply their Italian tongue to the pronunciation of the Spanish words. For all the shepherds that in those quarters dwelled, as they did marvell at the supernaturall beauty of these strange shepherds, so did they think it a miracle that they had in so short a time learned to talk with the Spanish shepherds, and that so eloquently and with such a grace, that many took pleasure to talk with them, and few departed from them without bearing away that which was sufficient to instruct them in their own language. In so much that divers of them being more curious then others, when they went to talk with the new shepherds, carried paper books with them to note up such phrases as Pererio and his sisters used in their talk. Besides the Castilian tongue, they had also learned to play upon all such rurall and pastozall instruments as were by the shepherds of that quarter used. On which instruments Pererio played with such dexterity, that the inhabitants thereabouts thought that Orpheus had been raised from hell to fill the air with the agreeing noise of his instrument, and to delight the
shepherds

Adventures in Love.

Shepheards of that Countrey with his pleasant notes. Euphilia and Perina, not much inferiour unto Perierio in that quality, yet far his superiours in singing a part in musick, by reason that their voices were clearer then his, when they sung unto their brothers instrument, moved the other Shepheards to wonder at their celestiall melody, and became so hereticall, that they thought Perierio to be some God, and his sisters two Goddesses, supposing it a thing impossible that mortall creatures should be indued with such heavenly and immortall conditions. But whatsoever they were thought to be, they were so beloved of all the Spanishe Shepheards, that no man thought himself happy y had not perfect friendship & alliance with them. Yea if the least injury in the world had been offered to Perierio, his aged father, or his beautifull sisters, they were all ready to revenge it, not as a private quarrel, but as some common and publick wrong done to the whole Countrey, and all the inhabitants thereof.

Dio Camilo, therefore seeing that he and his children were so beloved of all the Countrey, and taking great delight in the sweetnesse of the air of that climat, began to build farms and to purchase land, so that fortune favouring him, he became in short time wealthy and rich, and of great credit. Perierio his son, took great delight in hunting and fowling, often committing his flock to his sisters care, who kept both his sheep and their own with such diligence, that all men marked that they were not careless, but painful and industrious. Yea they won such labour and commendation in every mans eye, as their beauty was not onely praised in the Countrey, but also spoken of in Cities farre from them. And yet was their humble modesty such, that although their praise dayly increased, yet they nothing puffed up with pride, humbled themselves, and scorned not to keep company with the basest swain in all the Countrey. Every day they went forth with their flocks to the field, defending their faces from the heat of the Sun, with no other scarf or vail then a garland made of sundry kinds of flowers, that attire becomming them so
C bravely

The Troublesome and Hard

hazely, that they seemed to be daughters unto the Goddess
Flora for their exquisite beauty, marching with their sheep
through the pleasant Downs and green fields, more like to
some heavenly Nymphs then mortall women. If it chanced
there were a meeting of all the Farmers daughters, then
were they (I mean Euphilia and Perina) bid thither as the
mistresses and chiefest of the feast: Perierio their brother, like-
wise missed no feast nor game, being invited by the richest
and chiefest farmers sons; whereof many became suitors unto
his sisters and many of their sisters enamoured of his beauti-
full and comely disposition, wished themselves married unto
him. But he delighting more in tuning his pastozall Harp,
rejoyced his companions with a round or twain whilest that
others courted their mistresses, not so much because hee
would not debase himself to love a Shepheardesse, as for that
he shunned so lowly a Goddess as Cupid, esteeming his liber-
ty and freedom from fancy, the onely cause of all his joy and
pleasure. But fortune who thitherto had favoured both Perie-
rio and his sisters, began to withdraw her lovely looks from
them; and in lieu of a smiling countenance intended to shew
them a lowering face and frowning forehead. For not long af-
ter, it chanced upon a pleasant morning betimes before Phoebus
golden lines had greeted the Southern plains, that Perierio
haunting his accustomed hunt in a passing pleasant wood, not
far from the place where his sisters fed their flocks, (having
left his sheep unto their keeping as he was wont to do) espi-
ed a brave damosell, her beauty being comparable to the co-
lour that Venus face is dyed withall; sitting on a hillock,
and resting her head on her hand. At the sight whereof, Perie-
rio greatly amazed, retired behind a bush, where he not seen,
might perfectly both see her, and hear what she said: for he mar-
ked by her countenance that she was in a melancholy mood,
and vexed with extraordinary grief. Her words were these be-
ing expressed with a lamentable voice, moving the very trees
and bushes to yield tears.

Oh fortune, as oft as Phoebus appeareth in the woods,

as

Adventures in Love.

as often as he riseth in his Eastern gloze, and as often as his penetrating rayes warn me to leaue my restlesse rest, and harness me self to my endlesse toil, and neber ceasing labour; so oftenthon doest renue my grief and multiply my sorrows. What, Fortune, hast thou made all other women so happy through my mishap, that to make me an instance of the miserablest wight that libeth, thou hast delibered all others from their miseries, to throw them all on me? O most unjust doom! O most cruell Goddess! Though by reason of the exceeding injustice, thou deserwest to be crossed out of the catalogue of diuine powers. And therewith she rose from the hillock, and looking round about which way she might take. She espied Perierio behind the bush coming towards her, which she marking, staid until he came near her and saluting him with a most gracious countenance, said. Shepheard (for so much thy apparell betokeneth, though thy beauty be such, as maketh me to mistrust it, and think that thou art but a counterfeit Shepheard) pardon me if I be too bold in demanding thy name and countrey; which if it may please thee to tell me, thou shalt bind me to owe thee a good turn. Perierio (whose heart was pierced with Cupids shaft, and on suddain made captiue to that Lord whose service he so shunned) so gazed on this Lady (for she was no lesse, as you shall hereafter learn) in whose beauty all his desire rested that he could scarce speak one word; at last, plucking up his spirits, answered. Madam (for your exquisite perfections and stately countenance deserves no lesse) where no offence is committed, pardon is craved but in vain; I am an Italian boyn, called Perierio, the happiest man that euer was named, if occasion were presented wherein I might do any service acceptable unto you Madam. I thank thee Perierio (replied the young Lady) for this thy undeserued curtesie; and seeing I am not able at this time to make thee any recompence, I can but pray the Gods to grant thee thy hearts desire. And with that shooting into the midst of the woods. She was out of Perierios sight, because he thought she was departed. For when she heard by his

The Troublesome and Hard

name and Country, that he was not the man she doubted of, and gathering by his countenance, that he was suddenly struck in love of her, least he should become troublesome and unfortunate unto her, hasted thence, supposing that she being out of sight should also be out of the shepherds mind; and that by reason of her absence he should recover his liberty and freedom which her presence had caused him to lose. But alas, where she thought by her departure to ease his grief, contrarily she increased his passions. For he seeing that the sum of his conceived pleasures were fled, and she missing, in whose golden locks his soul was intangled, began to cry out with a loud and pittysfull voyce. My soul, my soul, whither art thou fled? Why hast thou left my body, seeing that thou being separated from me, I may not live? Ah poore Perierio! wretched Perierio! Die: die miserable Perierio. Ah cruell Gods, that have allotted me a life worse than death and a body without soul. Ah discourteous Lady, and is this the gratefulnesse you wished to shew me as a due recompence for my readinesse in doing you pleasure? Is this the thankfulnessse you talked of? Is this the good turn you should owe me? To steal away my heart, and carry my soul with thee, imprisoned in the snares of thy alluring looks; leaving my body breathlesse, and so giving me sufficient occasion to accuse them both of theft and murder, considering that thou hast robbed me of my heart and thereby deprived me of life. For now have I no life of mine own, but live onely in thee. Ah unhappy man that live, and know not where I live. for I live in that body which is in place as far unknown unto me, as that body it self. So that I live in a body I know not what, which unknown body is in a place, I know not where. Forgive me Cupid divine power and mighty God, I confesse to have offended in contemning and neglecting thy puissance: Which my contempt, thou hast punished with a pain the like never heard of before. The dart penetrated into the very inmost part of my heart and forced me to yeld to love. Seeing then I love, and am inroled in the scrowl of those that follow thy bands, as a
true

Adventures in Love.

true and valerous Captain lead me to the knowledge of that which I love. For I doubt not but that thou which hast had the puissance to make me love, and that so strangely, art likewise able to make me know whom I love. Thus Perierio after that he had with many sighs and tears bewailed the losse of his former freedom, began at length to consider, that the accustomed hour of his returning to dinner was past, and therefore least his father should marvell at his long absence, and by reason thereof fall into suspicion, least some mischance had befallen him (for old men are always carefull of their children, and as often as they be out of sight, so often do they deem them to be lost) he more like a shadow then a man crossed the nearest way homewards. Where he found his aged father sleeping, for the heavinesse he was in by reason of Perierios absence, rocked him a sleep: but as soon as he heard Perierio, he awaked, and then they fell closely to their chear, though Perierios mind ran more on his unknown mistresse then his present meat.

Whilest that these two were at dinner, Euphilia and Perina, to shunne the extreame heat of Phœbus, mounted in his Meridian pride, went with their sheep towards the Wood side, to take the advantage of the high trees which yeilded a most pleasant shadow: Where they sitting together began to take their Daten Pipes and sing. Euphilia began in this manner.

Whilest *Thaetons* sage fire
his scorching beams
On th'earth doth cast and move
the sacred crue,
Of Nymphs most chaste to seek
the silver streams;
Therein to bath their hands
of Christall hue:
My Pipe shall move the air
with her sound

The Troublesome and Hard

To send down drops and wet
the scorched ground.

Perina,

Whilest bright *Apollo* in his highest seat,
With fiery lines doth burn the tender grasse:
My notes shall pierce the skies and *Love* intreat,
To bid the winds repress their furious blasts.
That sweetly breathing on us in the field,
The glittering leaves a pleasant noise may yeeld.

Euphilia,

The chirping birds now do molest the air,
And to the clouds complain of summers heat:
The hunter ceaseth to pursue the hare,
And fowls do leave their prey for fainting swear.
Now therefore shall my voice the skies ascend,
To move the Gods this harmful heat to mend.

Perina,

Now do the simple sheep to shadow flie,
The Traveller by *Cynthia*'s light is lead:
To shun the rays which sparkling down the skie,
Proceed from fiery *Phœbus* golden head.
My Pipe shall therefore to the clouds complain,
Resolving them in showers of wished rain.

What an excellent matter is it (saith *Euphilia*) sister *Perina*, that we here leading this Country life, and being separated from the noise and tempestuous uproars and broyles which commonly are raised in the proud Courts of Princes, should enjoy such extream pleasure as we do in these pleasant groves, sometimes being in the shadow, sometimes sitting on the banks of the delectable *Riber*, and sometimes walking in the dark groves, where we both fence our faces from *Phœbus* injury. and delight our ears with the naturall Musick of the singing birds. I promise you truly (quoth *Perina*

Adventures in Love

rina) I am of opinion that the noise which the wind maketh among the trees, doth delight and recreate the hearts of men, more then & fond noise of some people when there is a great assembly. For there the greatest pleasure, is meeke grief; proud Majesty and highnesse, nothing else but vanity; feasts and games nothing but troubles and tempests; honour and renown, nothing but blind errours; and most commonly we find, that among them that delight in that kind of life, words and thoughts are different, the tongue pronouncing otherwise then the heart meaneth. But here (said Euphilia) ambition layeth not her bait, neither hath avarice or covetousnesse any place here. The people doth not here aspire to honours nor sse for dignities: but men live free from passions and perturbations in al virtue and simplicity. Here reigneth little or no malice, but all things are ruled by justice. Neither doth the simple shepheard (quoth Penina) seek out new parts of the world nor adventure into Strange Countries, committing himself neither to the cruell furious winds, nor unmercifull waves, to enlarge his treasure, or augment his riches. And yet he lieth as contentedly with that little which he hath, as he that doth abound in rich possessions and great revenues.

CHAP. III.

How *Marcelio* came to the house of *Camillo*, and of the strange adventures that befell him in his love to *Alcida*.



Euphilia and her sister were thus discurſing, they ſeemed to hear the voice of ſome diſtreſſed perſon, and Euphilia ariſing, eſpied a ſhepheard reſting his back againſt the trunk of a tree; but ſhe hoping to gather the ſum of his grief by the ſenſe of his complaint, ſtooped immediately applying her ear to the ſhepherds words, which were not unlike to theſe.

Ah love, thou canſt not invent any worſe torment then I feel, nor thou fortune canſt be more variable and inconstant, then

The Troublesome and Hard

then thou art unto me. And it is impossible to find a heart so bereft of all hope, and yet so content in suffering pain as mine whereof love is the onely cause; which upholdeth my languishing breath, to the end that I may indure the grief which continually bereth me. But when shall my tears and life take end: when shall my torment cease? when shall my sighs bring forth my heart with them.

And therewith he took his way straight towards the place where Euphilia and Perina late. Whither he arrived so sorrowfull, so weary, and so grieved, that it seemed that fortune pittying his case, had purposely sent him to that place to comfort him and assuage his dolours, not onely by means of the clear water which did spring out of the fountain whither the shepheards accustomed to lead their sheep to drink: but also by reason of the pleasantnesse of the place the shadow of the trees, and exceeding beauty of these two noble shepheards. In so much that all these things caused him to think that he had received some solace, though the importance of that which he sought, and the desire he had to find the same, gave him no leisure to rest in that place. Yet was he, being a stranger so curiously entertained by the two sisters, that he deemed himself not a little happy to have lighted on such company, wherefore he being intreated by them to go with them to their lodging, to eat something, and to refresh himself with such dainties as their country manner afforded, could not but grant their request, and so followed them unto their fathers house. Where he was received of aged Camillo and his son, not as a stranger, but as one that had been of their near kindred and affinity. For they marking his singular beauty and perfection of body, his excellent grace in speaking, his sharp wit, and his comely behaviour, thought him worthy of all the curtesie they could imagine to shew him. Supper being done, old Camillo took his leave of the strange shephard, and went to his rest. But Pererio and his sisters keeping the shepheards company, led him into the Orchard to take the evening air, after that Phoebus had shut up his light in the Western parts. And Euphilia desirous

Adventures in Love.

grousto know what sinister chance had brought the shepheard into such a Chaos of cares and world of sorrows, began thus to be inquisitive of his fortune.

Gentle shepheard, seeing that the night is no time to trawell, and you are so tired that you are like to fall in great danger of some soze disease, unlesse you look to your self and rest your weary limbs, I heartily pray y to stay with us this night, and you shall have no worse bed then where my brother lieth on, nor worse bed-fellow then himself. And soz as much as the pleasantnesse of this cool air is such, that it inticeth and provoketh us to recreate our selves therein: if that you will whilest we expect the coming of the dark night, unfold the cause of this your wandring journey unto us, and make us partakers of your evill and adberse fortune, we shall think us to be greatly beholding unto you. The shepheard would not be long intreated by such excellent persons, but walking with them in a pleasant arbour of Egline, began to discourse after this manner.

Gentle shepheards, the manifold benefits which it hath pleased you to heap on me being a meer stranger, unworthy by my deserts of the least courtesie in the world, bind me to yeeld to whatsoever you can demand of me, as far as my simple power stretcheth. And therefore although my evill be of such nature that it cannot be communicated unto all kinds of persons yet the opinion which I conceive of your deserts, and the valor which your beauty becometh, constraineth me to make an open rehearsal of all my forepast life, if I may learn that life which I would willingly counterpoise and change with death. Know therefore gentle shepheards that I am called Marcelio, and that my vocation and estate is far contrary to that which my cost sheweth. I was boyn at Soldine, the principall and chief City of the Province of Vandalia, and my parents were of great authority, abounding in wealth & riches; I have been brought up even from my childhood in the Court of the Lusitan King, where I was much made of, and dearly beloved, not of the principal Peers onely, but also of the King himself.

The Troublesome and Hard

himself. Insomuch that he would not suffer me to part from his Court, until that time that he had committed his Garisons in the borders of Affrick unto my charge. Where I remained a long time chief and general Governour of all the Cities and Fortresses which the King there hath; keeping my residence in the City of Cente, where my misfortune and adversity took beginning. There was in the same City a certain Knight named Eugenio. who was by the King honoured with the charge and government of the City. This Knight had a son called Polydor, most valiant and courageous in all extremities; and two daughters called Alcida and Clenarde, exceeding all the Gentlewomen of their Country in beauty. Clenarde was indued with singular dexterity in handling her bow, but Alcida, who was the eldest surpassed her in beauty. Who hath so enamoured my heart, that she hath been the cause of this hopelesse and desperate life which you see me lead, and of the cruel death which I call and wish for every hour. Her father was so carefull and dainty of her, that he would scarce allow her at any time to absent her self from his presence, which hindered me that I could not let her know the affection which I bore her. But nevertheless as often as I saw her I signified and bewaied my pain unto her by means of my passionate looks, and the signs which proceeded from my heart without the consent of my will. At length I found occasion to write unto her, and therefore unwilling to neglect such wished opportunity, I sent her a letter the contents whereof were such.

Ma celo unto Alcida.

MA lam, your honesty and grave countenance, your modesty and wisdom, your wit, and great judgement, and thousand other virtues with which you are most happily indued. besides the incomparable beauty which increaseth your renown in all parts of the world, have so entangled my thoughts in the consideration thereof, that I have been forced to collocate, and place the sum of my felicity in meditating the rare gifts both of body and mind, by which

Adventures in Love.

it hath pleased the Gods to make your Ladyship famous. But when I consider mine own unworthinesse, and perpend the great difference, which is between such excellency and my self, such is the despair which possesseth my heart, that I suffer incredible torment. Yet the force of your beauty constraineth me to judge my self happy, in that I suffer pain for so worthy a Lady as your self. So that I feel singular joy and gladnesse in my evil, and receive an extreame glory in enduring grief. Pain unto me is a pastime; to weep, a pleasure; to sigh, a solace; grief, health; which doth raise the fury of torment in me, though therein I enjoy a blessed content. All this do I suffer for you Madam; it is your beauty and virtue which causeth me to be tormented with such contrary passions. And therefore pity an unfortunate lover, who offereth you his own life, and who desireth not that his evill may be redressed, but onely wisheth that it may be known.

This was the Letter which I wrote unto my Lady, which if it had been so well penned as it was fortunate, I would be loth to change my ability with the eloquent stile of Tully. The Letter being secretly conveyed into the hands of Alcida, at the first caused her to be offended with my boldnesse, but at last marking the sincerity of my love, and the constancy wherewith I not onely remained steadfast, but also patiently endured her scornfull answers and disdainfull looks, her heart was altered, and she moved to reward my love with a pleasant countenance. So that when my luck was to see her, I easily espied the alteration of her former forwardnesse. For her very eyes did warn me to be of good chear, and I might plainly see grace seated in her forehead. After which time I began openly to shew my self to be her superiour, oftentimes jutting, turneing, and writing verses, poems, and many such other things for her service, remaining in this pain the space of certain years. Which being expired, Eugerio thought me worthy to be his son in law, and by means of some of the chiefest personages of the City, he offered me his daughter Alcida in marriage. And it was amongst us agreed that our wedding should

The Troublesome and Hard

be kept in the City of Lisbon, to the end the King of Portugal might be present at the same. Whereupon we dispatched a Post in all haste to advertise the King of this marriage, & to intreat his Majesty that we commending our charge unto faithfull and trusty persons, might come thither to celebrate our marriage the. The rumour of which marriage was incessantly spread through all the City and the neighbour places thereof and caused such a general joy and applause in all men, as so beautifull a Lady as Alcida, and so faithfull a lover as my self deserved. Untill that time it seemeth that I was very happy. But fortune that favoured me so highly, afterwards cast me down headlong into the depth of these miseries, in which I find myself presently. Know therefore that after my unfortunate marriage was concluded on, and the Kings license granted, Eugenio being a widower, his son Polidor, his daughters Alcida and Clenarde, and unhappy Marcelio, who unfoldeth his mishap unto you, having committed our charge to loyall persons, we embarked at the Haven of Centa, to sail to the noble City of Lisbon, there to celebrate our marriage, as I have before said. The content and pleasure which we conceived of our wished desires, in such manner blinded us, that regarding neither the unmercifull waves nor the boisterous winds, and commending our vessel to fortune the patronesse of inconstancy, we went to sea in the worst and dangerousst time of the year, not considering or perpending the inconveniencies that at such times are ordinary. But very shortly thereafter, fortune chastised our temerity and fond rashness: for before night had covered Neptunes face with the curtain of darknesse, the Master of the ship discovered certain tokens of tempests to come. Soon after began the thick and obscure clouds to cover the skies, the angry waves began to murmur, the winds blow variably. Whereupon the master of the ship with a fearful and troubled countenance uttered these words. Ah sorrowfull and fearfull tokens! Ah unfortunate bark! What ill luck and miserable adventure is prepared for thee, if the Gods here shew not their deity!

Adventures in Love.

He had no sooner ended these words, but a certain boisterous and furious blast so launched on the mainsail, and in such manner whirled into the body of the whole ship, that at that instant she was in such danger, that he who held the stern was forced to abandon the government thereof, and so the ship following the mighty fury wherewith she was led, & went whither the wind and waves did drive her. The tempest increased more and more and became greater and greater; the furious waves covered with white foam began to augment their anger and to rage more then before. There might we see a massie rain falling from the element, intermingled with lightening and fearfull thunder. There might we also hear a terrible noise and shaking of the sail yard, the mast, the lines, cords, cables, and tackling of the ship. There might we also hear the lamentable voice both of the passengers and Mariners, which caused us to fear exceedingly. The winds beset the ship on all sides, and the waves battered it in such manner, that the very strongest and best nailed parts thereof burst in pieces. The proud sea sometimes lifted us up to the firmament, and suddenly she carried us down even unto the bottome; yea and (that which was wonderfull) the waves in such manner parted asunder, that we might plainly see the sand & gravel in the bottome of the sea. The men and women that were in the ship lamenting and bewailing their infortunate end, some fetched heavy and grievous sighs from the bottome of their hearts; some offered pittifull vows, others yeilded fountains of tears out of their eyes. The master of the ship not knowing what to do against such raging fortune, his cunning being overcome by the fiercenesse and perseverance of the tempest, could no longer conduire le timon.

He knew not the nature nor off-spring of the winds, and in one instant commanded and ordained a thousand different matters. The Mariners troubled and vexed by reason of the agony and perplexity of their present death, could not execute their charge, and by reason of the noise and cries of the passengers, could not understand what the master prescribed them.

The Troublesome and Hard

calling as loud as he could for his life. Some of them turned the sail yard; others haled the fore-cord; others Tricked the top-sail; others came to mend the split sail; others to save the main-sail; others did take of the bonnet and enlargement of the main-sail; others were occupied with knitting the broken lines together; others looked to the hinder deck-tail and castle of the ship; others to the fore-deck; others to the hatches; others boarded the sea into the sea, casting the water out of the ship. To be short every man did what in him lay to defend and save the miserable vessel from inevitable shipwreck. But all their diligence served to no end, their vows and tears helped not to appease angry and fierce Neptune; but the night approached more and more, and the wind and tempest increased marvellously. When the dark night was fallen, the tempest being nothing asswaged, Eugenio hoping for no remedy, with a terrible countenance, representing the very picture of fate and despair, his eyes being cast on his son, his daughters, and me his son in law, gave us sufficiently to understand by the heaviness of his looks, what grief he suffered for the death which was prepared for us. As much that his care and grief did as much hurt, as our own misfortune. The poor old man indurged with sorrow, spake in this order with a lamentable voice, the tears running down his face.

O changeable Fortune, enemy of humane welfare, hast thou reserved such a wofull disaster for my old days? Oh how happy are they that die in bloody battels amidst their enemies in their youth, to the end that never attaining to their latter age, they fall not into danger to bewail the pittifull adventure & death of their loving children! oh wonderful mishap! oh sorrowful successe! who ever ended his life with such grief as my self? For whereas I thought to comfort my self at the time of my death in leaving children in the world, to conserve and keep the memory and remembrance of my lineage and kindred, now I am constrained necessarily to die with those that ought to celebrate my funerals. O loving and dear children who would have thought that my life and yours, should have

Adventures in Love

have finished at one self same time and instant? Who would have thought that our lives should have taken their end through one and the self same misfortune? I would willingly comfort you my dear children; but what solace can a sorrowfull father give, whose heart is pestered with so much grief, and who himself is void of all consolation.

Comfort your selves my children arm your hearts with patience, leave all grief and sorrow unto me, to the end that I dying may suffer as many deaths as ye all must endure.

This old Eugenio uttered with so many sighs and sobs that he could scarce with much ado speak, embracing us all one after another, to take his leave and bid us farewell, before the hour of eminent shipwreck was come. It would be a great enterprise, and difficult matter for me presently to recount what tears Alcida wept, and what grief I suffered for her sake and therefore I will onely tell you one thing that nothing so much grieved me as that my life (which I had offered for her service) could not take end without her death. In the mean time our forlorn ship driven with the force of the angry waves and furious winds (which blew so marvellous strongly) flying all night though the freight of Gibatan, more swiftly then we wished or served our turn the next day went astray. I know not how many leagues into the large Mediterranean sea.

Where after that we had long wandered hither and thither, the force of the wind and waves driving us up and down for the space of that day and night, the next morning the tempest seemed to be something allwaged, and the ruffled waves abating their courage, Neptune spread a pleasant calm over the sea; wherewith we were not a little cheared.

But fortune not contented to have heaped such a world of calamities upon us would also take her pleasure in mocking us in the midst of miseries. For on the suddain the wished calm was turned into a worse and greater extreame tempest then before: which brought us into such extremity, that we hoped not for one hour of life. At last one side of the ship being broken with a great raging whirlwind the other side lay

flat

The Troublesome and Hard

flat upon the water, and was in danger to sink presently.

When I saw the manifest danger, I began to ungird my sword, to the end it might not hinder me, and embracing Alcida, I leaped with her into the ship boat. Clenarde being a light and nimble Gentlewoman, following us did the same, not leaving behind her bow and arrows, for that she esteemed more of that than of some great and precious treasure. Polidor thrusting his father forwards, thought to have done as much, and to have leaped into the boat as we had done; but the ship's Master, with another Harriner, leaped in before them: And as Polidor with his aged father thought to have followed, the boat was separated from the ship, by reason of a mighty wave which was driven by the wind betwixt the ship and the boat, so that they were forced to remain in the ship: the sight whereof in short time we lost, and never since heard any news of her. But I am of opinion, that (all doubt removed) she was swallowed up by Neptunes greedy waves, or that crossing overthwart the Sea, she perished miserably on the coast of Spain.

How *Bartophamus* the Pylot, by Treason, left *Alcida* in the Isle *Formentaria*, and *Marcelio* in the Isle *Juigue*, and carried away *Clenarde*, and what ensued.



Erieno and his sisters listening to Marcelio's discourse, he proceeded in this manner. Alcida, Clenarde, and I, being in the boat, conduced by the industry and diligent painfulnesse of the Harriners, we went astray up and down the seas for the space of one whole day and night attending for Death from hour to hour, without hope of any remedy, not knowing where, or in what part of the world we were. This notwithstanding, the morning next following, we perceived that we were very near to land, endeavouring to row as near it as we could possibly. At the length, the two Harriners being very cunning in swimming, did not onely
leap

Adventures in Love.

leap into the water to swim to the shore, but also drew us all to that so long desired land. After we were so happily delivered from the danger which furious Neptune threatened us, the Marriners fastened their ship/boat to the shore side, and knowing the place where we landed, told us we were in the Isle of Formentera: and wonderfully marvelled that we had run so many miles in so little time. But they had such experience of the wonders that fierce tempests are accustomed to be, that they were not too much amazed at the curse of our navigation. Yet howsoever the tempest had driven us, we were then assured and out of danger of the menaces wherewith fortune feared us amidst the inexorable waves. But we were so grieved for the losse of Eugerio and Polydor, so troubled with wearinesse, and so famished with hunger, that we had none or little cause to rejoyce of the life which we had recovered. Neither will I now rehearse what tears Alcida and Clenarde shed because they had lost their father and brother, to the end that I may tell you the sorrowful and unhappy successe, which I had in that desert and solitary Isle. For after that, by reason we were arrived in the same, I was delivered from the fury of the sea, love became such an adversary and enemy unto me, that he seemed to be grieved that my life was saved from the perill of the tempest, and that he would torment me with a new and more grievous pain, when I thought my self to be in safety. For malicious Cupid wounded the heart of the Pilot (who was called Bartophamus) and rendred him so far in love of the beauty of Clenarde, the sister to Alcida, that to attain to the point of his intended desires, he forgot the law of friendship and fidelity, and imagined a strange and wicked treason which he did put in execution. Which was such.

As the two sisters wept, and grievously lamented their fathers and brothers miserable death, it happened that Alcida overcome with heavinesse and wearinesse, she lay down on the sand and fell asleep. Whereupon I began to say to the Pilot: friend Bartophamus if we take not some order to provide for victuals, and if our ill luck be such that we can find

The Troublesome and Hard

none, we may make account we have not saved our liues, but rather that we have changed the manner and kind of our death: and therefore would I that you and your companion should go to some village or burrough of this Ile, which I may find, to fetch meat for us to eat. Sir Marcelio (answered Bartholomaeus) fortune hath done us pleasure enough in bringing us hither, and helping us to arrive at this Ile, though it be desert and barren. And you must not think that we shall here find any meat to assuage our hunger, and remedy our necessity; for the country is not inhabited. But I will tell you how we may find means to suffer no hunger: do you see yonder little Ile that lieth right over against us, in that Ile there is great quantity of Deer, Conies, Hares, and many other beasts. There is also a Hermitage, where the Hermite hath good store of bread and meal. Therefore I am of this advice, that it were good that Cleonarde (whose dexterity and cunning in shooting is not unknown unto you) should passe over to that Ile and carry her bow and arrows, which she hath here with her, & kill some Hart or Doe, I and my companion will row her thither, and you Sir Marcelio may stay with Alcida. For it may so come to passe, that before she awaketh, we shall return hither with abundance of fresh and savoury provision. This counsell of the Byast was well liked of me, and Cleonarde, we not thinking of his pretended treason. Nevertheless Cleonarde, would not in any case passe over to the said Ile, unless I went with her; for she durst not trust the Mariners. And although I excused my self not to go with her, saying that it was not convenient for me to leave Alcida alone, and that sleeping in a place so solitary; she answered, that the distance between that place and the little Ile, was not very great, that she was sure that we should bring good provision with us, for that there was much venison in the Ile, and that the sea was calm and still. (for after that we were set on shore the raging waves were appeased) by reason whereof she concluded, that we might passe over to the Ile, and return again before Alcida awaked, especially because she was tired with weariness
and

Adventures in Love.

and had many nights been deprived of her rest. Finally, she alledged so many reasons, that forgetting what was most convenient for me to do, I resolved to accompany her to the Isle. Whereof Bartophamus was not a little grieved, for that he sought not to have any, but Clenarde onely to go, to the end that he might the better execute his villainous treason, yet wanted not the villain means to bring his wicked will to passe: for we leaving Alcida asleep alone, and being all settled in the boat to passe to the Isle, I thinking of no hurt and being unarmed (for I left all my weapons in the ship when I leaped into the boat with Alcida to save our lives) the two mariners fell upon me, took me and bound me.

Clenarde seeing their manifest treason, would for grief cast her self overboard into the sea, but the Pilot held her, and taking her aside, secretly said unto her in this manner. Woe, trouble not your self for this fact, and be not grieved at that which you see us do; we do it in your behalf you shall understand, that this Marcelio as soon as we were arrived in your desert Isle, spake secretly unto me, and desired me to counsell you to passe over to the Isle hard by, and after that we were on the sea, that I should sail Eastward, declaring that he was in love with you, and that he would leave your sister in the Isle, to the end that he might have you at his pleasure, without any let or hinderance. And whereas he made such difficulty, and seemed so unwilling to accompany you, he did but dissemble to cloak his malice, But I beholding the worthynesse of your passing beauty, not to prejudice your deserts, at the very hour that I should have executed the treason, I resolved to remain loyal and faithfull unto you, and thereupon have served Marcelio as you see, with full deliberation to leave him at the end of an Isle not far hence, on the shore side, and thence to return with you incontinently to the place where we left your sister sleeping. Now you know how the matter standeth, and therefore see what you will do.

Clenarde hearing this in good sooth beleaved that it was all true, and was mortally angry with me, being very well

The Troublesome and Hard

content that Bartophamus should carry me to that place where he had appointed to leave me. Besides, he beheld me with a disdainful countenance, that I could not enough marvel at the strangeness of her alteration. And she was so enraged that she could not speak, but she rejoiced in her heart, that she should be so revenged of me; without perceiving the knavery which the Pilot went about. So that I well marked, that Cleonarde was nothing grieved at my evil intreatment, whereas notwithstanding at the first, she took it so heavily: and therefore I said unto her, How now my sister, what mean you by this? Do you think both my misfortune and yours, and the danger wherein the Seas have placed us both at this instant, to be so small and of so little weight, that you ought so soon to cease from weeping? Or do you hope to see us soon delivered out of their traiterous hands, that we may be revenged of their villany. Whereupon she inflamed with fury, like a fierce Hyeme, told me, that I was so dealt withall, because I would have left her sister Alcida in the solitary isle to lead her away, and many other such brave invented lies, which the Pilot had made her to believe.

When I understood that, I felt such an extreme pain, and was so grieved, that I well perceived, that never the like had befallen me before; and although I could not stir nor touch those Prasants, yet I miscalled them, and railed at them wonderfully.

And as touching Cleonarde, I alledged her such quick and forcible reasons, that at length she knew that all this proceeded out of the love which the Pilot Bartophamus bore her. So that she began so piteously to lament our case, that it was sufficient to mollifie Stones, but not the hard hearts of those traiterous mariners. Now consider, that our boat had in short time with marvellous swiftnesse overrun a great part of the sea, when as unfortunate Alcida awaked, and found her self alone, who seeing that she was so abandoned and forsaken, turned her eyes toward the sea side, to see if she could espy the boat and perceiving that it was not there, she went along the shore

te

Adventures in Love.

to seek us, but she found no body. We may well think, beautiful shepherds) what grief Alcida suffered at that instant, and imagine what abundance of tears she sent from her Crystal eyes. Consider I pray you, in what extremity the miserable young Lady found her self, when as she was left all alone in that solitary and desert Isle: perpend in like manner how often she meant violently to cast her self down headlong into the sea, molesting the air with her lamenting voice, and how often she called me, and forced echo to repeat my name in the element. But we were by this time so far separated from her, that we could not understand her cries, but we might well perceiue that she with a white handkerchiff (which she lifted in the air) made sign that we should return, but the traitor Bartophamus could not be intreated. But sailing marvellous swiftly with wind and tide, wee arrived at the Isle Irique, where he landed and with his companion carried me on the shore, tying me to an anchor that stuck in the ground. Incontinently certain Mariners came thither being of Bartophamus acquaintance and of like disposition. And notwithstanding that Cleonide recommended her honour unto them, & prayed them to deliuer her from Bartophamus his wicked enterprise, yet she obtained nothing the more of them peasants, who took no regard of her just complaint, but gave the traitor sufficient provision to liue, wherewith he entered his boat again, taking Cleonide with him solely against her will. After which time I haue not seen her, nor heard any news of her. I remained there a long time famished and bound hand and foot. But the chiefest part of my grief consisted in the calamity and miserable case which poor Alcida was in, being left alone in the Isle of Formentera. For as concerning the necessity whereto I was, that was soon redressed. For certain mariners that were more pittifull and honest men then the other villains, hearing me call unto them, came near me, and freed me from my wonderfull kind of prison unloosing the lines wherewith I was tied to the anchor. And after that they had giuen me meat to asswage the fury of hunger (which well

The Troublesome and Hard

Wear had overcome me and caused me to resign my life) I was so earnest with them, and so importunately requested them to carry me to the Isle of Formentera, that they being moved with pity, presently rigged a briggantine, and making provision of victuals and weapons, sailed with me to the Isle of Formentera, where I had left Alcida. But what search I made I could not find her. Suppose gentle Shepheares that she had chosen the sea to be the sepulcher wherein she buried her grieved body, or that the wild and savage beasts had made a prey of her tender limbs. But I searching along the shore, plains, rocks, valleys, caves, dens, and most secret corners, and burroughs, of all the Isle, at length found a piece of a rock wherein certain letters were ingraven with the point of a knife, which contained this protestation; which I as deeply ingraven in my heart with the edge of my memory, as it was cut in the hard rock with the point of a knife.

Thou sandie medow, desert all and dry,
Thou sable, like the plumes of snow-white swans,
Thou sea that throwdest Neptune in his court,
And art acquainted with my flowing tears,
Thou furious wind and variable air,
Molested with my grievous sad complaints;
Where painted and engraven doth remain,
Th' exceeding torment of my helpless grief;
All ye make true report of my intent,

For seeing that mine own Marcelio
Is with Clenarde fled I left alone,
And hath his faith and all my hope withall,
Is with his sails committed to the wind;
Bear witness that Alcida thus forsaken,
Henceforth will never fancy person more;
For fear to enter in such dangerous seas
And eke to fall from freedome to like foil,
From pleasing rest to such disquiet toil.

Adventure in Love.

I will not here make mention of the wound which I felt in my heart, when I read this memorial, that I knew that by fortunes cursed spight, I was hated of my Lady and mistress, whom I love nearer then mine own life. Wherefore being environed with so many calamities and troubles, I as weary to live any longer, would have pierced my distressed heart, intending to run on the point of my sword had not those good Mariners that were with me, not onely by perswasions and words, but in effect and deeds also hindered my intent. They forced me half dead to return to the Brigantine, and by my importunate intreaties they sailed towards the coasts of Italy, and landed at the Haven of Cayetta in the Kingdom of Naples: wherein I enquired for Alcida, asking news of all those that I found; and at length meeting with certain Shepherds, after I had told them certain tokens of her, they knowing whom I meant, informed me that she certainly landed at the same Haven in a Spanish ship, which passing by the Ile of Formentera, and thence rivers, finding her there all alone, fetched her aboard. And that because I should not find her, she had changed her apparel and clothed her self like a shepheard. Whereupon I also became a shepheard to the eye, in outward colours, hoping the sooner to find her; and in this habit ran over the whole Country: without meeting with any man that might tell me news of her. At length I found a certain shepheard that gave me intelligence, that he knowing that I was informed of her being there, took ship and sailed into Spain. So that with all speed I took ship also, minding to follow her, and I arrived here in Spain: which I have almost coursed over, and as yet I cannot hear any tidings of this cruell Lady, which I seek with such labour and exceeding pain.

And this (gentle shepherds) is the Tragedy of my life, this the cause of my death, and this the successe of my mishap. If perchance I have troubled you with the tediousnesse and perplexity of this pittifull history, the fault is in you selves, who have so earnestly desired me to do the same. In the
mean

The Troublesome and Hard

mean while, I beseech you not to take your pleasure in going about to remedy my evil, nor to comfort my distressed soul. But let me spout out of my unfortunate eyes so many tears, as so fast an occasion requireth. Wherewith Marcello having ended the discourse of all his misfortune, he began to sigh and weep so bitterly, that it was pittifull to behold; in such manner that no man that saw him could not but be moved with exceeding pity.

CHAP. V.

How Marcello taking his leave of Perierio and his sisters, departed in search of Alcida.



Uphilia having heard this pittifull and lamentable discourse of Marcello, was sorely grieved for his cause, and gave him this comfortable answer. Sir Marcello, the strangeness of your mishap is sufficient to abash any man whatsoever, and to give him sufficient cause to be grieved though it concern not himself; but seeing there is no harm so great but may be helped in tract of time, and as fortune is inconstant in her favours, so is she likewise not constant in her frowns, and she hateth men as well from adversity to prosperity, as she casteth them from their wicked pleasures to an intollerable grief. Inasmuch that her onely essence is inconstancy, and all her being is being variable, as well in withholding her favours, as in bestowing them. And therefore (valiant Knight) be of good cheer, draw up your spirits, and courageously take hold on the shield of hope. For I doubt not but that you shall in short space attain to your wished desires, and find your Lady whom you say to be in these parts of Spain. For if it be so (as I certainly believe it is) all doubt removed, I shall hear of her by reason that all the shepherds of the Country resort hither; so that it cannot be but we shall hear of them such news as they know, and it may so fall out, that Alcida her self
may

Adventures in Love.

may have occasion to passe this way. But howsoever know this, that she cannot be long in the country but we shall hear of her. And besides, we will give order that she shall be sought for in the most secret places of the whole country. But in such manner, that your arrival into these parts be kept secret, least she flee into some other country further off. Marcello thanked her greatly for her exceeding and undeserved curtesie, and desired her to remember to do as she so freely and of her own voluntary goodnesse had promised. Whereupon taking his leave of her, Perina, and Perierio, notwithstanding that they were loth to let him depart ere morning, yet he so earnestly desired them to take his most just excuse in good part, and to suffer him to do according to his own intent, that they could not but let him accomplish his pleasure. So that Marcello thanking them all in most curteous manner, for their rare hospitality & singular benevolence towards him, departed late in the night from those famous shepheards, and took his wonted course in running up and down the woods, rocks, plains, caves and all such solitary and desert places where he thought he might meet with the cause of his grief, and yet the sole mistress of his heart and onely object of his content and delight. The noble shepheards were marvellously sorrowfull for his departure: but especially Perierio, who (as you have heard) was in love with the Lady that fled from him in the wood. For he had purpose to ask Marcello certain tokens of his Alcida, because he doubted whether that Lady which he had seen had been Alcida; but for that Marcello had declared, that his Lady was apparelled in the habit of a shepheard, he gathered that it was not Alcida, because the Lady which he saw was most sumptuously and gorgeously attired, more like some Princesse then a counterfeit shepheard. Whereof he was glad for two respects; the one because Marcello had rehearsed Alcida her protestation engraven in the rock. Whereby he signified that she would never love any man living more. The other, because Marcello was Alcidas husband in troth and promise, & therefore thought he should have but hard luck to become competitor

The Troublesome and Hard

and cozriball to so woꝛthy a knight and faithfull lover as Marcelio. Euphilia and Perina went to their rest, but Perierios mind was so intangled in the conceit which he had of his strange love, that he could not rest, but tumbling and tossing up and down in his bed, by that time the day appeared, he went from bed as he came unto it, for he had not so much as shut his eyes all the time that he lay. As soon as he had put on his cloaths, he went into the Orchard to drive away his melancholy passions; but the more he strived against love the lesse he prevailed, and the means wherewith he sought to quench the fire which Cupid had kindled in his breast, did kindle the same. For hearing the birds sing their naturall notes, and fill the air with their chirping noise, he began in this manner to renew his passions.

Ah pleasant birds, that bewray your wished consent by your shrill voice, which soundeth so sweetly in the air. would I were so happy that I might have cause to sing with you. Ah cruel Fortune that didst send me into the wood to meet with my enemy. Ah unmercifull Cupid that goest about to slay me, by her for whose service I would willingly offer my life? Why hast thou made me love her that hateth me? And why prolongest thou my life to increase my torment? If I may not enjoy her in whom my felicity consisteth, I must die. And therefore if I must be deprived of my wished desires. sweet death mend thy pace, and deliver me out of this intollerable grief. Make hast ye fatall dames, and cut the line of my life, that with the losse of the same, I may gain a pleasing rest and quietnesse. But why do I request, where I may command? Have not I this dagger which at my pleasure may cause the dreadful Destinies to throw my miserable body (the very habitation of grief) breathlesse on this ground? True, but what if with one stroke, I make four wounds in four severall bodies. For if I die, aged Camillo cannot live, nor yet either Euphilia or Perina. Therefore rather then my father or my sisters should end my Tragedy, I will indure the extreamest torment that love or fortune can invent.

Why

Adventures in Love.

Why then come woe,
and be my daily weed ;
Come, come, and wend
with me in every place,
Come be the drink,
and meat whereon I feed :
And paint thy colours
in my youthfull face.
Let fortune frown,
let wanton Venus hate :
Let Cupid fret,
woe is my trusty mate.

And therewith Perierio flung out of the Orchard, and went with his sheepe to the field. And after Euphilia and Perina being warned by Phoebus silver lines, that Aurora had cleared the air, and expelled the darknesse of the night, followed with their flocks also. But Perierio lest they should perceive his inward grief by his outward looks, led his sheepe something farre out of the way, where he thought he might be out of sight, untill he had powdered forth the tears which as yet sate in his eyes. Dinner time being come, he washed the tears from his face, and looked as chearfully as he could, least his father or his sisters should mark any alteration in him. He lived thus for the space of two moneths, weeping and lamenting the absence of the Lady which he loved, oftentimes ranging through woods, to see if he might be so fortunate as to meet with her again.

The Troublesome and Hard

CHAP. VI.

How *Euphilia* and *Perina* came to the knowledge of *Periclio's* love and what conference passed between them.



Discreetly soever *Periclio* cloaked his grief under a pleasant countenance, yet because he so delighted to be alone, haunting solitary places, *Euphilia* and *Perina* began to suspect that their brother had something or other that troubled him.

And they could not enough marvel why he so often separated himself from their company whereas notwithstanding he was wont so pleasantly to recreate them, either rehearsing some history, or sounding his instrument, or discoursing of the disposition of the water, inclinations of the Planets, and of the celestial orbs. And therefore they could not imagine what might be the cause that he was of a merry, become melancholy, and to delight in solitariness, where he so coveted company. And to the end that they might know what moved him to alter and change his natural complexion, upon a certain morning, when the air was something darkened with a grosse mist, they followed him secretly into the woods: and although he almost tired them with trotting up and down all the paths and cross ways of the wood, yet they marvelling at the strangeness of his walk, rested not untill the bright beams of the sun had chased away the dusky mist: for then they were compelled to stay behind *Periclio* a pretty way, lest they should be seen by him.

At length he being overcome with weariness, the sooner because he laboured in vain: grief and travail together forced him to rest. He therefore espying a tall Pine, which did cast a large and enticing shadow, threw himself down on the hard ground under the same, and taking his country *Cytheren* lute so sweetly unto it, that the heavenly harmony of his music amazed all the Deer and birds in the wood.

Euphilia

Adventures in Love.

Euphilia and Perina had no sooner marked that their brother had taken the advantage of the Pine, to shrowd his weary body from the insury of Apollos heat, but they entring in the midst of the thicket, to draw as near him as they might hear the sound of his instrument rebound against the bushes, where of they were passing glad, hoping that he would betray his thoughts to the dumb trees and sencelesse bushes. They therefore listening, heard him sing in this manner.

*Floribusnt plenum ver, sic mea vita periclis,
Piscibus ut que fretum, sic ego mille malis:
Adversis cumulo, cumulat; ut hortus arenis;
Gaudia me fugiunt, sorte petit que dolor.*

My mind is void of mirth, no joy
my humor doth possesse;
No pastime doth avail, nor sport
my grief for to redresse.
No mule may move, no song delight,
no, no, nor pleasure please;
No tune can touch, no fancy like,
no toy can work my ease.
No game, no play, no dance, no shew,
no company at all;
No exercise, no use of bow,
nor yet of boul or ball.
Ne Bacchus cups, ne Ceres chear,
ne Venus looks unsure:
From wo to wantonnesse, can now
my pensive thoughts allure,
Care, care, doth waste my years though young
and vex my youthful age;
And therefore since no worldly thing
my dolour can assuage.

The Troublesome and Hard

I am content because compeld,
where others laugh to weep :
At night a thousand thoughts resolve,
where others take their sleep.

After he had ended this Sonnet, Perina his youngest sister, seeing that he arose to depart thence, whistled and so staid him. For he marvelled who it should be; but at length espied both his sisters coming towards him, which wonderfully astonished him, because they had never done the like before; and curiously greeting them, asked what the cause was of their coming thither? Euphilia answered, your self brother Perierio. For though we have great regard of our own welfare (quoth Perina) yet we do not regard our selves onely, but are as carefull of your fortune as of our own. And therefore we (quoth Euphilia) marking and perceiuing by your solitary walks, that you were troubled with some grief or other, and that some misfortune had happened unto you, we were as sorry as if it had been our own case. This brother Perierio, is the cause of our coming, to see if we might come in knowledge of the evil which tormenteth your youth, that it being known unto us, might by our diligence and industry, be remedied and amended. Therefore brother conceal it not from us whatsoeuer it be, and you shall find in us more then sister-like readinesse, if more may be. Ah loving sisters (quoth Perierio) I cannot enough thank you both, for the love you bear me; and in truth the onely cause that I have smothered my pain with silence, not detecting it unto any of you, hath been, for that I was loath that you should be grieved for my sake, and I wished nothing so much: as that al the discontent and anguish of my evil should rebound to no bodys grief but mine own. And therefore (sweet sisters) if you love your selves and me also, with not to be acquainted with my soze, least you suffer part of the pain. But content your selves, and look to the tranquility of your own hearts, not tormenting your selves in my behalf. But you be deceived herein brother Perierio (quoth Euphilia.)

For

Adventure in Love.

For in thinking to free us from grief by concealing your evil you do amisse. Know you not that they which are carefull of any mans welfare, and so tenderly love him, that they think themselves hurt if any ill light on him, are continually compassed with fear if he be grieved, thinking the cause thereof oftentimes to be far greater or worse then it is?

Quando ego non in tui graviora pericula veris?

And therefore brother you afflict our hearts with divers torments in concealing your evil from us, whereas we can but feel one pain if we knew it. For now the torment of suspicion in suspecting divers things, doth assail us of one side, fearing sometimes one mischief sometimes another; every one whereof woundeth our hearts with passing sorrow. And fear maketh the assault of the other side; causing us to imagine that the matter is far worse then it is. Lastly, hope troubleth us as much as suspicion or fear. For though it be a motion of the mind of future luck or good to come, and not of evil; yet is it but a perturbation of the mind troubling and vexing it continually; and he that hopeth enjoyeth not his hearts ease nor quietnesse of mind. Why then sister (quoth Perierio) to rid you of all suspicion, fear and hope, know that I love, and suspect no worse, nor hope any better; and ask me no more, for I should not be able to answer you if you should be too inquisitive. The reason is, because I know not whom I love; nor where she is whom I love. And is it love (quoth Perina) that troubleth you? Why then lest you not this verse out of the Sonnet, which you sung to the Cytharen but even now.

*Ne Bacchus cups, ne Ceres chear,
ne Venus looks unsure:*

*From wo to wantonnesse, can now,
my pensive thoughts allure.*

Well remembred sister Perina, (quoth Euphilia) for if he be in love, he must needs offer sacrifice to Venus, and what but the

The Troublesome and Hard


the unsure looks of Venus hath caused him to give over all pastime and mirth, and live in passionate grief. And yet he saith.

That Venus looks unsure,
could no way him allure.

How then can you love Perierio, if you be not allured by beauty? Very well sister (quoth Perierio) For though Venus be accounted the Goddess of love in being mother to Cupid, yet doth she command no further then beauty stretcheth: which is not the onely object that moveth men to love. What think you not that vertue, nobility, excellency, or wealth, may move us to love? Then you must confesse that I may love, and yet not allured by Venus colours. Nevertheless know, that beauty is the onely cause and motive of my love, and yet do I not think that the verse which my sister Perina so well remembered, was unfitly inserted among the other verses of my Sonnet. For seeing that I loved, and yet was bereft of all hope, ever to enjoy her whom I loved (because I neither knew what she was, nor where she was, as I have already told you) by reason whereof, I wished no greater pleasure then grief, nor better companion then wo, and therefore might very well say, that the unsure looks of Venus should not provoke my pensive thoughts from wo to wantonnesse; meaning not by Venus looks sincere and true love, but wanton and voluptuous love.

CHAP. VII.

How Maffeo arrived at the place where Perierio and his sisters were; how he was enamoured on the Lady Eleonora, and departed with her into Spain.

 Perina thought to reply, she was interpellated by a certain knight that came galloping towards the place where she, Perierio, and Euphelia sat, being sorely wounded in divers places of his body, his sword being drawn, and holding a scarf of silk almost in pieces

Adventures in Love.

ces in his left hand. This knight seeing Perierio and his sisters could not enough marvell that he had found shepheards so far surpassing in beauty. And drawing near them, he was so curteously saluted by them, that he was amazed to have such an unlooked for Salve. And requiting them with like curtesie, asked them whether they had not seen any men riding that morning through the same wood. Perierio answered no. And as the knight thought to take his leave of them, Euphilia desiring to know what he was, found occasion to stay him, and therefore spake unto him in this manner: Sir Knight, it seemeth that you are sorely wounded, by the abundance of blood which hath issued out of sundry parts of your body, and therefore I think it were not amiss, if you should alight from your horse, and tie up your wounds, ere you travel on any further.

And for as much as we are far from any town or village, if it will please you to take in good part such homely fare as my fathers country cottage can afford, you shall find us ready to lead you thither, and to welcome you to such cheer, as may content nature, though it be not comparable to courtly dainties. The knight being very weary, and fearing least he might incur extreame danger, if it should happen to be long ere he might reach to some town, though he was ashamed, necessity forcing him thereto, accepted of Euphiliass offer, thinking that God had sent him in that wood to meet with those curteous shepheards, who beyond all expectation proffered him such friendship and succour, he being a meer stranger unto them. Therefore thanking them for their exceeding curtesie, he did bear them company to their fathers house, where the old man rejoycing to see so comely a person by his son Perierio and his two daughters, feasted the knight in such manner, that he easily might perceiue that he was welcome. After they had ended dinner, Euphilia asked the knight how he had gotten all these wounds, and what ill fortune had brought him into such danger. Whereupon the knight began to make this discourse of his tragedy. Gentle shepheards, to the end that

The Troublesome and Hard

you may know that you have the miserablest man in the world before your eyes, here present with you, I will as briefly declare you the history of all my life as I may, so I be not troublesome unto you to hear the tragicall events happened unto me since my cradle. I am loath to give you any cause of grief. But seeing that it pleaseth you to know the cause of this my mishap I hold my self bounden to pleasure you, and do according to your desire. And to be as little tedious as I possible may I will use as much brevity as the greatnesse of the matter will permit me. Know therefore (gentle shepheards) that fortune threatening me bad luck began to lower on me before I came into the world, for she conspired my death before I was born. You must note how that my father before I was born had no children, but his brothers son was his adopted heir, and should have inherited all his lands, had he died without issue. So that this adopted heir having intelligence that my mother was big with child, very carefully waited for the time that she should fall in travell, which hour being approached, he corrupted the midwife with a great sum of money to smother me at my first entry into this world, and to spoil me of my life before I perfectly lived. But no; fortune would reserve me to worse events, and I was not so happy to be dealt withall as my unkind cousin had appointed. For the midwife being pricked with remorse of conscience and overcome with pity, could not find in her heart to stifle me in her hands when as I was committed to her to be tenderly handled and looked to, with all the care and diligence that might be; but she invented another manner to content Silvestro. (for so was my cousin named) which was secretly to steal me from my parents, and to convey me into the house of a poor labouring man (whose wife was wont to serve for nurse unto such poor mens wives as for weaknesse or sicknesse could not bring up their own children) about twenty miles from the place where my parents dwelled, which was the renowned City of Constantinople my father at that time being generall governeur over the same City. The Midwife made
the

Adventures in Love.

the same poor labouring man and his wife believe, that I was
sent unto one of her cousins, that she had in the abovenamed
City being called Bradalso, and therefore willed them to take
all the care and diligence that might be, in fostering me as a
child ought to be, and that she would accordingly reward them;
as she did, for she payed them duly week by week, as long as
she lived. Thinking her fault more excusable, seeing she cau-
sed me to be brought up with part of the money which she
took of my cousin to spoil me of my life. I omit for brevities
sake, what grief my parents suffered for the losse of their
long desired sonne, especially because they knew not
what was become of me; but they thought nothing so sure, as
that I was dead, and that the midwife would not let them
know of it, least they should have been too suddenly oppressed
with such sorrowfull news.

When I was three years old or thereabout, the midwife
died such a sudden kind of death that she could not take order
with my nurse for me. The nurse therefore having intelli-
gence of her death, fearing least she should keep me for no-
thing (which she was not able to do being a very poor wo-
man) borrowed her neighbours horse, and rode with me to the
City of Constantinople; where at the midwifes she inquired
for the same Bradalso, whose child she thought it was: this Bra-
dalso, being a young man of some four or five and twenty years
of age, and unmarried. Swore by all that he might, that he ne-
ver had to do with woman in his life time, so far as to get her
with child. Whereof the woman wonderfully amazed with
not what she should do with me. And so poor Matteo (for that
is my unfortunate name) was become a bastard that had nei-
ther father or mother that would know him or receive him as
their child, and yet had both father and mother, who would
have thought themselves to be the happiest parents that lived
under the vail of heaven if they had found their own beloved
infant, whom they thought to be dead long since. But my cou-
sin being informed by the rumour spread through the City that
a child nourished three or four years by the industry of such a

The Troublesome and Hard

midwife, could find neither father nor mother. after the same midwife was dead, began to calculate the time of my birth, and finding it to be full just at the time that the nurse avouched that I was brought unto her, remembred that the midwife had told him, that she had dispatched the child, & taken such order that he should never be heard of. And therefore he never thought any otherwise but that I was dead. But after he had heard this rumour spread through the City of me, he began to think how women are pittifull, & therefore doubted whether the midwife had caused me to be fostered or no in that place, because he should not hear of me; he considered also, that my parents had told him divers times, that I was not dead but lost, or rather stoln: though in truth they thought I was dead. and imagined that the midwife had but made them to understand that I was lost, or stoln to diminish their grief with hope. He considered also, that the midwife was no woman to be the mother of the child her self. seeing that she had been widow a long time, and was above 70 years old when she died. Which age was not convenient for wantonnesse, to be short, he concluded that it was I, and fearing lest if the nurse should make too diligent search to find out my parents, it might at length come to my fathers ear, and himself thereby deprived of his hereditie, he caused the nurse to come unto him and told her, that seeing no man would father me he would have me brought up to be his page. seeing that I was a pretty fair complexioned boy. And agreeing with her for my board, charged her to let me want nothing, and to use me well. After that time he came oftentimes to the place where the nurse dwelt, to see whether I was well handled, and sent me apparel by his men, and money to discharge my expences for my board. When I was about ten or eleven years of age, he took me from that place and made me his page, but in truth he used me as if I had been his brother rather then his boy: by reason whereof my father, (though I then did not yet know that he was my father) made the more of me: for my cousin dwelled with my father, and was as his son. In the mean time I thought my self most happy

Adventures in Love.

happy, seeing that I had no father, to have hit upon so good a master. Whom I served as faithfully as he dearly loved me. After I had served him the space of three or four years, his father by adoption, and my father by right, though fortune had beguiled nature, died, and my mother within three moneths after his burial. So that my master being in possession of all my fathers goods, lands, and lordships, began to Court all the chiefest gentlewomen of the city, thinking himself worthy to be matched with the chiefest. Among all others unto whom he made love, he chiefly offered his service to the daughter of a Spanish knight that lived in Constantinople, called Don Francisco de guerdona, a man of great valour, wealth, and policy. So that my master to obtain the love of fair Eleonora (for so was the gentlewoman called) sued, sought, watched, wooed, praised, protested, and did what service a man might be said to do in the behalf of his mistress; sometimes he played late in the night before her window, on his Lute, Cytharen, & Bandora; sometimes he turnered and jested in her presence, to move her to love him for his manhood: and sometimes he sent her letters, songs, and sonnets, therein bewraying his passions; hoping she would receive him to her servant, being overcome with pity. But all served not: for she could no way be moved to bear him affection; whereat I marvelled greatly, nor could not imagine at the cause thereof. For he was a brave valiant young Gent of great authority and estimation, favoured by fortune, as wealthy, rich, and abundant, endued by nature, being beautifull and fair of complexion, tall and well proportioned, and of a courageous and resolute mind, wise, politick, and witty. All which considered, no man could but condemn the Gentlewoman of cruelty, seeing that no man so faithfully served her as sir Sylvestro, (for so was my master called.) But at length I had sufficient occasion offered me, not to marvel any longer at her forwardnesse towards my master. For Eleonoras mind was more settled on the Page that was wont to bring her letters and papers, wherein was his masters message, then on him that sent them. Which she at last shewed and

The Troublesome and Hard

betrayed so openly, that I began to perceive what affection she bore me, and how she both despighted and despised my master. For I being sent unto her upon a certain morning with a pair of like garters from my master, all edged with gold, and interlined with pearls, most sumptuously and artificially wrought, she taking the garters out of my hand, gave me a Portugal Croado, (being worth six English Angels) for my pains. Whereof I was very glad, partly because I was so well rewarded, and partly because I thought she began to make more account of my master in accepting the present, so bountifully rewarding the messenger. But as I was departing out of the house to let my master know of the good news, (hoping thereby to have augmented my Croado with my masters liberality) she called me again, and leading me into her bed-chamber alone, burst out into these words. Ah Matteo thou dost serve thy master too trustily to do me pleasure: and thou art an instrument against thine own welfare. Howso Madam (quoth I:) I will soon shew thee how (quoth she) but first you must tell me whether you think not that he hindereth himself that sueth to obtain that thing for another, which is wished unto himself? Yea Madam quoth I. Then (replied she) do you harm your self in endeavouring by your carefull painfull, industrious and diligent service to satisfy your masters desire, in that he wisheth her to be his wife, unto whom thy self mayest be a wedded husband. And so if thou grant that thou wouldest be glad of such a wife as Eleonora, I conclude that thou strivest against thine own commodity, and that thou art an instrument against thine own self.

When I heard her conclusion, it so well liked me, that I considered not whether the consequence followed according to the premises, or no. Yet howsoever it was so contrived, that it set me at a non plus, insomuch that I stood amazed, and knew not what befitted me. I had never yet followed the Court of Cupid, though I had served one of his souldiers: and therefore I was to seek of mine answer, and wist not what to say. Notwithstanding that I felt an amorous passion creeping

Adventure in Love.

ing in my heart, contrary to any motion that I had felt before. For I know not how, my thoughts were surprized with love, after Eleonora had argued in such order with me, and I feared that she had been but in some merry vein to test, taking her pastimes in mocking with me. And therefore I made this answer, Madam you are very merry this morning. Whatsoever the matter is, God grant it be towards your good luck. And you are the bolder with me, because you may. But least my master long for my coming I beseech you to tell me whether it will please you to command me any service. for I must hast homeward. None other (quoth she) but that thou thank him for his present, and give him this from me, which is no lesse worth then his; and so I do owe him nothing. Wherewith she reached me a Hat that was sent her father from a Spanish Duke, being a most costly Jewel. I therefore taking my leave, she bid me farewell, adding this clause to shut up her Vale, Dolest me no more for thy master; do for thy self what thou wilt Masfeo. To be short, I returned unto my master with such answer as Eleonora commanded me. But I began to be so love-sick, that I knew not how it was possible that a man might be so greatly altered, and so wonderfully changed in so short time. Within a few days after, my master had prepared a letter to be sent to Eleonora, which I put in my pocket, and walked up and down the streets not far from the place where she dwelled. and when I thought good, I returned home with such answer as my brains could invent and so I served my master, obeying the command of Eleonora. Who was so fixed in my heart, that I could not be separated from the thought of her beauty and excellency one minute of an hour. And though I sought by all means possible to extinguish the fire that consumed me, least at length it might grow to an unquenchable flame; all helped not, I strove against the stream, and to go about to root out the sparkles of love, was as hard a matter for me, as it were to any man to pluck the stars out of the christ. line orb, wherein they be fixed. Therefore at length, not able to endure any longer, I wrote Eleonora a Letter to this effect,

Masfeo

The Troublesome and Hard

Maffeo to Eleonora,

Lady, the extream pain which my overburthened heart doth suffer, causeth me to let you understand the greatneſs thereof. I was in liberty, but you have brought me into bondage, I mean of the mind. I was free from thoſe butchers, the affections which torture the hearts of men; but now by you, am delivered into the hands of thoſe cruell vexations which do peſter my passionate heart, that I am forced to ſlie unto your mercy. Pity therefore your poor Maffeo, leaſt he die: who if he hath been too bold in bewraying his grief and torment unto you, hopeth himſelf to be excuſed in that your ſelf are the cauſe thereof. Farewell Lady, and think on poor Maffeo.

She had no ſooner received my Letter, but ſhe ſent me this bitter anſwer which ſhe did but to try my conſtancy as afterwards it very well appeared. The contents were ſuch.

Eleonora to baſe Maffeo.

I Perceive Maffeo, that baſeneſs and fondneſs ſtrive in thy heart for ſuperiority; of which fooliſh ſtrife I mean not to be an arbitreſs. Could you find no fitter perſon then my ſelf, to part the fray? Poor ſwad, could thy tongue pronounce in my preſence, which thy heart cannot perceive in mine abſence? and cannot you with deep ſtudy having had all this time, attain to the knowledge of my humour, whereas notwithstanding extempore, you gave to right a censure of my vein, When Eleonora mocketh, thou muſt not imagine that ſhe meaneth: and when ſhe jeſteth, thou muſt not think that ſhe is in earneſt. As for the loſs of thy liberty, not I, but thy baſe ignorance and dul wit is the cauſe thereof. But grant I were, do alwayes they that imprifon ſet at liberty? No, many are taken by one, and delivered by another. Leave thy fondneſs Maffeo, leaſt I have cauſe to hate thee, for I may not love thee. I bid thee farewell, for I wiſh thee no evill. And therefore take heed thou offer me no occaſion thereto.

Adventures in Love.

¶ We may suppose (gentle shepherds) how coldly that letter comforted distressed Maffeo, when he expected the sentence of life or death. But then I perceived that she had but mocked with me, when she used her merry pottle pattle unto me in her chamber at her own house, yet ceased not to burn and fry in the furious flames of my burning passions: and so remained as long as I could, striving against love like a valiant champion; and passed over two moneths in continual skirmishes against Cupid: but alas, who was compelled to yield at length, but I that fought against a God of such force and puissance: insomuch that I chose rather to die, than to live without the love of Eleonora, and in all hast dispatched another letter, which I secretly conveyed unto her, the meaning whereof was much to this purpose.

Maffeo to Eleonora.

Lady I am loath to molest you, and yet cannot chuse but trouble you. Love hath so conquered the bulwark of my heart, that I have determined to offer my life for your service. I know that Eleonora did mock, and doth now disdain, but I am forced to suffer, and am ready to die, because both mocked and disdained by her in whom my life consisteth. And therefore though by fortune I am base (as you urged) yet by nature I find the contrary, in that noble Eleonora is the subject of my restless thoughts. You willed me to take heed lest I should give you occasion to hate me: if I do, though it grieve me, yet I cannot help it. Nevertheless, so you give me leave to love you, I shall be content, though you hate me.

Farewell.

¶ Unto this Letter, she sent me no answer, but it happened within two or thre days after that she had read it, that I had occasion to passe through the street where she dwelled, she seeing me, and sitting in the doze alone, called me unto her, and brake forth into these bitter words.

The Troublesome and Hard

Why Maffeo, thinkest thou not that thou doest me displeasure enough to trouble me with thy odious letters, but must you also fret me with the sight of thy ignominious person? I have wished these two days that I might see thee to cast out all the anger and spight unto which thou hast moved me upon this. But seeing thou hast vowed thy life to my service, I mean to try thy faithfulness and obedience; and yet desire not to have thy life. I command thee therefore to carry this letter unto thy master Sylvestro: but I will allow thee to read it before I seal it.

With that she felt in her pocket, and with her hand in colour like to Juno when she braved the Queen of love for the golden apple before the Trojan youth,) drew forth the letter and bid me read it. The meaning I remember to be such.

Eleonora to Sylvestro.

THe knavery of your Maffeo, hath given me occasion to use your service Sylvestro. Therefore if I may be so bold with you, I would intreat you to punish his knavish sawciness; for because he seeth I make little account of his masters feigned love, he offereth me letters wherein he painteth his own passions. I have admonished and warned him to leave his peevishness; but seeing he despiseth my warning, let him fear your threatening.

Farewell.

When I had read this letter, I was in worse case then before: it would be too long for me to make rehearsal in what a passionate state I was, both while I heard her rail at me like a raging Lyonelle, and when I saw by the reading of the Letter how she sought to be revenged of me that I was ready to resign up my life, and to fall down dead in her presence for love grief, and fear: and contrarily, gladness and hope made such a combat at one instant in the midst of my heart, that I knew no more of myself, then he that was never born.

A

Adventures in Love.

At length gathering my senses together, I came to my self; and answered her: that whereas she sometime said, that I was an instrument against my self, she should now have most just occasion to say the same, and most fit matter whereout to gather premises producing the conclusion of her saying. And though it be my death (quoth I) to do your command, yet I will and must obey. With that she having sealed the Letter, I took it and went away; bidding her adieu with all the humilitie that I could for my life. And posting to my master, I delivered him the Letter which was so spightfully written against poor Maffeo, notwithstanding that I was not ignorant of the contents thereof, though my master knew not so much. But as soon as he read the letter, supposing that I had been the onely cause of his bad successe in his amours, drew forth his dagger and threw it at me; and seeing that though the dagger stuck in my leg, yet it had not given me my fatall stroke, ran at me with his naked sword, intending fully to glut himself with the blood of his innocent page, and cousin german (though I as yet then knew not that I was so.) But I stepped aside and got out of the house as soon as I could, flying unto one of our neighbors who seemed to make much of me, and in whom I had most confidence. Unto him I declared how my master was fallen out with me, and shewed him the wound which he had given me, meaning to slay me. This man being a poor honest man, and a Baker by his occupation, by name Pharicles, was likewise cunning in chirurgery, and so willingly and so carefully dressed my wound, that I thought him worthy of greater reward then I could give him. But the smart of the wound, the sorrow of my grief, and the torment of love, cast me into such a dangerous disease, that I was in great peril of death, and out of all hope ever to recover my life again. After that I had lain in that case six or seven days, late in the night came Eleonora unto me, in the habit of a gentleman page, because she would not be known, and told the baker Pharicles that she was my cousin, and that she had brought something to make a confection for me. Whereupon the good

The Troublesome and Hard

Baker arose, and opening his dooz let her in, and sent her up to my chamber. Where she seeing that I was alone fell down on her knees before my bed, and weeping most pittifully, pronounced these words. Pardon me sweet Maffeo, pardon me, and could not for grief speak one word more, but shed out whole streams of tears, which running down her cheeks, fell on my bed, and in such sort wetted it as if it had been cast in to some river. I amazed at that sudden chance, could not tell whether I dreamt, or whether I was awake; for me thought by the voice, it should be Eleonora, but when I looked on her besture, I suspected it had been my master that had repented in such manner, for that he so hardly used me. But to rid my self from doubt, I reached the candle that stood by my beds-head, and looking her in the face, I soon knew my Eleonora, who was in the like taking that I was when I read that unfortunate letter before her. Incontinently I lifted her from off her knees, embraced her, and kissed her on her tender lips, saying: What Eleonora my Lady and mistresse, do you humble your self after this order unto you servant? Bluck up your heart and be of good chear; and ask no pardon at my hands, for you have not committed any fault against your servant. Ah Maffeo (qu. she) my fault is great, and so much the greater, because against Maffeo. After we had passed on great part of the night in such talk, she in accusing her self, and I in reiterating my unworthiness, at last we promised each other troth; and agreed to leave Constantinople and flie into Spain. For because she knew that her father would never agree unto our marriage, she concluded to provide a good sum of money, and many rich jewels, for the easier carriage, and so to transport her self and me into Spain, there to lead a contented life, until such time as we might be reconciled to her father, or fortune allowed us to return. This devise liked me so well, that all the medicines in the world, could not have cured my disease so well as the presence of her, for whom I was so willing to die. To be short, she appointed me the hour and place where I should meet her, when all things were prepared for
our

Adventures in Love.

ur voyage. Where I finding her in the same habit that she was when she visited me, we took ship; and sailed unto Saint Lucar in Spain, where we lived contentedly and merrily for the space of five or six years. In the mean time you must note, how that Eleonoras parents marvelling what was become of her, were exceeding sorrowful.

CHAP. VIII.

How Maffeo and Eleonora sailing towards Constantinople were severed by a tempest, and Sylvestro drowned: also how he met with her again.

My cousin Sylvestro, having heard of her secret and sudden departure and mine also, began to suspect that we were together, and that Eleonora sent him that letter but to give the matter a contrary colour. Wherefore considering that the Gods so favoured me first in that my life was saved by means of the pitifull midwife, and afterwards that I was loved by so noble a gentlewoman where he was rejected, his conscience began to prick, and urged him so far, that on a morning he went to the house of Eleonoras father, and declared to him the whole matter. Whereat he wondring would have besought the Magistrate to burn Sylvestro at a stake; but that Sylvestro promised him that he would go to the end of the world but he would find us, and in like manner discover the whole case unto us, and bring us home to Constantinople. In so much that six years being expired, I espied my cousin Sylvestro walking in the Market place, and least he should see me, I went homewards to carry the news unto Eleonora. But he espied me, and followed me to the place where I dwelt, and entring into the hall, where I sat with Eleonora, fell down on his knees, and informed us of all the matter: shewing us his testimoniall letters and passeport, from the city of Constantinople, wherein was mentioned that he was purposely sent to seek us. Besides he brought letters

The Troublesome and Hard

Written with Eleonoras father, Don Francesco de Guerdonaes own hand. Whereof we were so glad, especially Eleonora, that we could not but pardon my master, who now became our servant. You may well think that we made as speedy preparation as we could to return to Constantinople. For within eight days we found a ship rigged and thoroughly furnished, with provision of victuals, and all things necessary, which was bound to Constantinople. In which ship we conveyed our selves with all that we had, and hoysing sail committed the vessel to Neptunes mercy. But variable fortune (that cannot be reduced into any order, sometimes being lighter then the wind, and flying more swiftly then an arrow being shot out of the bow, and sometimes heavy and marching slowly, and resembling the Tortyle; Variable fortune I say) being loth that we should rejoyce of our felicity without any proof of sinister hap, raised such a tempest on the sea, that the ship being battered with the swelling waves, clove asunder and burst into pieces. So that every man catching hold some on a piece of mast, some on a piece of a board, some on the ship hatches. Eleonora having a young child by her, (for God had enriched us with a young Spaniard called Alonso, though the poor babe was as soon hated of fortune as it was born, therein not unlike his unfortunate father (for it was but thres moneths old when we came to sea. She emptied one of our greatest chests, and therein clapped her self and her young Alonso: stirring & beat up & down in a piece of an Ear which she had spied in a ship. My cousin Sylvestro reaching to two or thre oars thinking to lay the under him tumbled into the sea. I for my part had gotten a great piece of cork, which such as it was, by the help of the Gods saved my life. But nothing so galled me, as that I saw my onely Eleonora and Alonso, floating on the terrible sea within the chest, and yet I could not come near her, and the traitorous waves would not drive my cork the same way that the chest was carried. For the winds blew so crabbedly that the chest floated one way, and I with my cursed cork was driven quite contrary. So that in short space I lost the sight

of

Adventure in Love.

of the chest, and therewith of all my joy. Imagine gentle shepheards in what plight poor Masco was at that instant. For as long as I could see my Eleonora and her Alonso, I perceived not the perillous case I was in, but after I had lost that blessed sight, I marked in what danger I was to be swallowed up by the greedy waves at every moment. Yet the grief that I suffered for that I knew not how Eleonora fared, permitted me not to care for my self, who almost an hundred times had purposed to leave my cark and cast my self into the depth of the roaring sea, and very Court where Neptune sate to rail at him for his fierce government. But yet I know not how my dreadfull destinies inbeigling my heart with vaine hope, reserved me to worse mishaps. After that I had rowled up and down the seas a whole night, in the morning betimes I espied a great ship of war on the sea, so that I being something comforted at the sight thereof, began to call unto them that were aboard of her, as loud as my voice could reach. But the Parriners though they heard not my voice, by reason of the noise of the waves which did beat against the belly of that great ship; yet seeing me, considered in what necessity I was, and steering the ship as near as the steerman could, they threw out a cable rope which I caught by the end, and so got into the ship. Thus God had redressed my necessity, he wot whether it fared with poor Eleonora and Alonso. My life was saved, but my sorrow nothing ceased, yea increased rather. For thinking on Eleonora and Alonso, I was so beset with grief, that my life was in greater danger then when I lay rowling up and down the rising waves on the Cork. I had not been in the ship above the space of three days, but the wind blew so slowly, that we were not the better for our sales, but were compelled to use all the oars that were in the ship. As we had thus rowed one day and a night we espied a chest floating on the sea, which by reason of the lightnesse was carried away more swifter then our great ship. At length it approached so near us, that I might well perceive it to be the same chest wherein my Eleonora was. And when I saw that no body
was

The Troublesome and Hard

was in the chest, suppose (gentle shepherds) whether I had not sufficient occasion to think that fortune had made Eleonora, and my unfortunate boy Alonso, a prey unto the hungry. Whereupon I fell into such a trance, that having by the diligence of the Mariners recovered my senses again, I heard them say, that they had never seen the like extasie. O spitefull fortune! when she beginneth to frown on men, she never ceaseth untill she maketh them most miserable, and bringeth them into despair. And when they are in such distresse, that they think it impossible to be worse handled, then she to shew her power, augmenting their evill, causeth them to acknowledge their heresie. As I for example, who could be in worse case then I was, when sprawling on the cock amidst the raging waves, I was in danger every moment to be devoured of Neptune? Yet I sard worse when I lost the sight of my dearest Eleonora. And a thousand times greater was my misery, when I saw the empty chest. At which time, cursing the winds as helping causes to my mishap, the sea as greedily desiring the prey, the ship as the instrument that brought me into that Charibdis of calamity, the celestial Planets as hard hearted, seeing me injured, and not revenging my wrong, the stars as witnesses of my misery, and fortune as the efficient cause, yea primum mobile, and onely authoꝝ of what mischief soever had betided me; I would have cast my self overboard: but my intent being hindered by the Mariners, I was forced to comfort my self as much as the greatnesse of my hap could permit, and to arm my self with that old poesie, Dum Spiro, Spero. Though my greatest hope was despair, and my life worse then death.

Within a few days after, the Mariners taking occasion by a gale of wind, which blew something strongly, hoysed up their sails & arrived at Constantinople within two days after. Where incontinently I went to my father in laws Don Francisco de Guerdonas house, and declared the whole history of our navigation unto him, how we suffered shipwreck, how I saw Sylvestro my cousin fall into the sea, how I had lost Eleonora and my

Adventures in Love.

my child, & how I was saved in the other ship. But least I should kill the old Knights heart, I suppressed the sight of the empty chest. Don Francesco and his Lady, glad to hear their son in law speak, but sorry to understand the sum of his woful relation fell both into an extasie. At length the old man comming to himself said. Ah my dear son Maffeo, whose presence I have wished for so long time. What a disastrous chance is this? what spitefull mishap? what an horrible event? it seemeth that fortune (that monstrous Goddesse) hath endeavoured to exercise what mischief she can upon thee and thine. Ah Maffeo, thou seest these silber hairs which cover my face, are tokens how neere I approach to my grave; and yet this heart, which is inclosed in this weak and feeble body, is such, that I might with shield and spear encounter with fickle fortune, I doubt not but I should become victorious. But alas, force, manhood, courage or valour, cannot prevail in this case; and therefore onely resteth that we put on the armour of hope. It is not impossible, (seeing my daughter and her son were so well placed in a chest) that we should hear of her, and perhaps before we are aware, may see her. Wherefore seeing the Gods have saved you, and amidst such a multitude of misfortunes brought you home to your Country, I think it not amisse that you should acquaint your self with the estate of your goods, and take possession of such lands and houses which, your honourable father dying, your traitterous cousin Sylvestro inherited. Whereunto I answered, that well I might do it, but never should enjoy any pleasure though all the goods, riches, and kingdomes of the world were mine, unlesse I had my Eleonora and her child present with me: and therefore I meant not to stay at Constantinople. Which done, I took my leave of my kind father, and mother in law (who so wept at my departure, that it might have moved any man to commiseration) and so leaving them, I betook me to my fortune, meaning to try whether she would some time turn her wheel, and become more favourable then she was accustomed to be. After I had travelled by sea and land, so far that I marched
I through

The Troublesome and Hard

through most parts of Europe, through a great part of Asia, and
Africa, at last I shipped from the West-Indies, towards
Spain, where I had been three times before. For I know not
how, my mind gave me that if she lived, I should hear of her
there, thinking that she could land no where but in Spain, see-
ing that our ship was drowned near the coast thereof. But all
helped not in all those three years (for so long I had travelled
since my last departure from Constantinople) no living
creature could tell me any news of Eleonora or the child. And
therefore I would not return to my country, but thought to
run over all Spain, and thoroughly search the whole Country,
for I hoped not to find her in any place, if I found her not in
Spain; though my hope was little or none to find her at all,
considering that I had seen the unhappy chest spoiled of her
carriage. When I had ranged up and down the dry fields
and sandy meadows of the country nine days, at length I
came into a most pleasant green, through which there ran as
delectable a river as mans eye might behold the banks where-
of were beset with Orange and Lemon trees; which by reason
of their fruit cast forth such a fragrant and odoriferous smell,
that the very odour thereof did perfume the air in such man-
ner, that it did spread the same smell over all the neighbour
greens and meadows of that quarter. So that the coldness
of the river, the shadow of the trees, and the odoriferous scent
of the fruit, enticed me to rest my weary limbs on the river
side; where the pleasing noise of the murmuring stream did
bring me into the sweetest sleep I could have wished. You
must note, that the bank on the other side of the river was
something high, by reason whereof, my dear Eleonora (whom
I so painfully sought) lay in the grasse against the bank on
the other side the river, not being seen. Who whilest I
was a sleep, chanced to rise up, and seeing me lie with my
face upward, knew me. How glad she was (gentle shepherds)
I leave unto your discretion to judge of. But she willing to
try what remembrance I had of her, plucked off a lemon in so
like to the Indian gold, and in it ingraved this distichon.

Hesperie

Adventures in Love.

*Hesperio sub sole virum requiescere gaudet :
(Cum prole complaudens) Eleonora tuum.*

And casting the carved lemon on my breast, she lurked behind the bank lest I should see her. But I slept so soundly, that although I felt the lemon fall just upon my breast, yet I started not; for in that paradise I feared nothing: but imagining that the lemon was shaken off by the wind, I was loth to give over my sleep so soon. and therefore I turned my self to fall into sleep again. But as I held the lemon that was cast at me in my hand, I felt that it was something rough: willing therefore to see what kind of lemon it was, I read the poesse, and no sooner espied the name of Eleonora, but my heart seemed to leap out of my body for joy. Yet because I saw not her, nor any man in the world near me, I could not tell what to imagine of that lemon; but concluded at last, that the Gods had sent me that eminent token, in sign that I should hear of Eleonora and the child. At length she called on the other side of the bank, Maffeo, Maffeo, why dost thou not speak to thy Eleonora? Wherewith I as a man raging mad, looked up to the skies, sometimes down into the river, and sometimes over the meadow, and seeing no mortall wight, I brake out into this open exclamation.

O miserable wretch that I am! I ran over the world to seek my beloved Eleonora, and now I have found her, I cannot see her. Where art thou Eleonora, where art thou? O doth an eccho rebound the sound of thy voice from the other part of the world unto mine ears? O do I dream? O do I imagine to hear that which I do not? O is it the ghost of Eleonora that calleth unto her Maffeo? And if that be, why am not I a ghost also? O have the Gods hearing her bewail her miseries pittied her complaints, and changed her into one of these delectable lemon trees? O have the sacred nymphs being ravished with the love of Eleonora's beauty, led her with them into the secret bowels of this pleasant river: surely I be-

The Troublesome and Hard

leebe it is so. And therefore Maffeo make hast to follow her. Cast thy self into the silver streams Maffeo, and they will bring thee to thy wished and long sought for Eleonora.

Thus I being ready to leap into the water, Eleonora rose up, and came on the top of the bank, right over against me, saying. Stay Maffeo, stay, Eleonora is here; and here mayest thou behold thy son Alonso. At the sight whereof I was so amazed, that I knew not whether I did but dream, or whether it was so indeed. At last knitting my wits together, I perceived that I was not deceived or enchanted, but that with my naturall eyes I beheld my wife and my son, being a pretty tall wag about four years old. But to see the churlish nature of fortune wh^o though she seem to favour men, yet she doth in such manner with wrinkled frowns intermingle her favours, that they have no cause fully to rejoyce of her benefits. And so it fared with us, for what greater chance in the world might have gladded our hearts more with joy then this that I seeking Eleonora found her and Eleonora seeking Maffeo found him likewise, each of them saluting the other, and speaking the one to the other. And yet contrarily, what greater grief then this, that we had found each other. saw each other and spake one to another, and yet could not come one to the other; being separated by that, being something large and very deep. I could not swim, Eleonora lesse: and so we were in the pittifulllest taking that might be in the world.

Eleonora told me that she had travelled one day and a half along the bank-side of the river, and had seen no bridge from the place where she was, unto the side where I was. Inso much that we could not imagine how we might do to travell both together; for we were oath (seeing we had so happily met with each other) to part again, fearing least we should hazard our selves into danger of our former mischance. What remedy I wanted my word to cut down trees to serve me for a bridge, and looke word there was none. Nothing rested but this, that we should travell along the river by the banks side, she of the one side of it, and I on the other side

Adventures in Love.

side of it, untill such time as we had found means to get together.

After we had marched in that sort four or five hours, (in which space she had declared me how she was saved from the present danger of drowning, by the means of a Spanish galley; how that the chief ruler of the slaves that rowed in the galley kept her in a close prison, because she would not consent to his wicked and filthy desires; and how that by means of one of the galley slaves after she had been in that miserable and loathsome captivity two years and a half, set on shore, and brought to a country village not passing forty miles from the place where I found her) we met with a shepherd & his wife, who told us that we should within a small mile find a bridge to passe over the river, whereof we were passing glad. And in short space reaching to the bridge, I passed over to the other side and embraced my beloved Eleonora, & my young Olphonius, who began prettily well to prattle in the Spanish language, for his mother used continually to speak Spanish unto him. But mark (gentle shepherds) how fortune still sought to bar us from perfect felicity. For as we were thus embracing one the other, and rejoicing of our good successe after so much ill luck and so many dangerous chances; came three tall lubberly Boors, each having a good cudgell in his fist who approaching near us, and being enamoured with the beauty of Eleonora presently fell upon me, and binding me hand and foot, rowled me to the bank side where they left me; But Eleonora and the boy they carried with them, whither I knew not, untill the next morning, that she having escaped from the Villains (who were so busie in robbing a Farmers house, that they took but little regard of her) told me her self, being returned to the same place where they left me bound. You must note, that the thieves had set Eleonora with her child upon this horse which they had stolen with all the furniture belonging unto it from some Farmer by the way, and had laden it with swords and other weapons, with all which, she ran away, and rested not till she approached the bridge, near
which

The Troublesome and Hard

which I lay bound. I very glad to see her and my son, incontinently cast of all the weapons and other trash, saving this sword which I kept for my defence. And thinking it scarce safe to stay long in that place, we rode on a good pace, till we reached to a small village, where we lighted.

As soon as we perceived the darknesse of the night to fly from the beautifull glimps of Lady Aurora, to horse we hied, and rode on still towards the next haven. But Phœbus darting his beams on the plains so enflamed the air with the heat thereof, that we were compelled about mid-day to alight, and to shroud our selves from the Sun, under a Tree that stood in the midst of the high-way. The passing heat made me slumber, and from that slumbering I fel so fast asleep, that awaking, I missed Eleonora, and what was become of her. I knew not, but that the child which was by me cried, and told me as well as it could, that the naughty man had run away with his mother. Whereby I suspected that some villain or other was by Fortune suborned again to crosse me with her currish envy. In what grief and perplexity I was at that present time, you may think (gentle Shepheards) by your selves: how perplexed you would be if you were in the like case: yet seeing it was not the first time I had been in like taking, I stuck to patience, and cleaved to hope. For my heart was so hardened in unfortunate events, & unhappy chances, that contemning Fortune and all her power, I could better behabe myself in adversity then I was accustomed. And therefore speedily leaping on horseback, I took up my Alonso with me, & rode till I came to the next village, where leaving the child with an honest shepheard (unto whom I declared y^e case wherein I was, promising to reward him thoroughly for the boys maintenance til I fetched him thence, which I hoped would not have been long) & desiring him to use it well, I posted thence to seek sweet Eleonora, that poor Eleonora whose life was so miserable, because so dear to me. As I coursed with my steed up & down the wildest and solitariest places of the country, at length this morning (being the first day after I lost Eleonora) I fel into y^e hands

Adventure in Love.

hands of the same villains that took away Eleonora the first time, when they tyed me by the unfortunate Bridge. These on every side assailed me, some behind, some before, and some of them on each side of me: for they had increased their company by four men, so that there were seven of them. Yet by the help of the Gods and my sword, I so acquitted my self, that with no worse wounds then these, I got from them, and recovered this Scarff, which Eleonora for hast had forgotten and left behind her, when she ran away with this horse.

Thus (gentle shepheards) have you heard the whole history of my life, and I hope you are satisfied as concerning your question. Now I am to request you, to give me leave to follow on my journey; for until I find Eleonora, I cannot rest. And so Maffeo, thanking them for their courteous entertainment, took his leave and departed. Now therefore leaving him to seek Eleonora, we will proceed in rehearsing the success of Perierio his strange love.

CHAP. IX.

How Perierio resolved to travel in search of the Lady on whom he was enamoured, and how he obtained leave of his father under pretence of becoming a Scholler.



Perierio being intreated by his sisters to tell them whom he loved, though he could not name her, for that he knew her not; yet he let them know as much as he could tell, and declared the whole matter unto them; how he met with that Lady by chance, how that she asked him his name and country; and how there

with she conveyed her self out of sight on the sudden. Euphilia and Perina were very sorry, that their brothers love was of such a kind, that it might not be remedied, but by giving over love. For it was altogether casual and accidentary, neither

The Troublesome and Hard

ther might they hope that ever he might enjoy his love, for that there was nothing lesse like yea it seemed rather impossible.

For they considered, first, that he had never seen the Lady before that time nor after; by reason whereof, though he chanced to see her, perchance should not know her. Secondly, they marked that he knew not her name, her parents, or Country, to enquire after her: so that the nearest place he knew where he might find her, was the world, and the properest individuum to denominate her, was a certain woman.

And lastly, they perpended that she sought for some other Knight, who had her heart in hold; and therefore a very hard matter, though Perierio should find her, to obtain her love. All this considered and weighed, they sought to root love out of Perierio his brest which Cupid had so pierced with his dart, that all the perswasions of the world could not serve to extinguish the fire which was kindled in his heart, and increased more and more dayly. In so much, that the fire being enflamed, and beginning to torment him with insupportable pain, he determined to commit himself and his case to Fortune, hoping, that as the cause of his grief was accidentary, so the effect might by chance be redressed and remedied.

Perierio thus resolved, asked, and obtained leave (though with much ado) of his aged father, to travel into far countries, to see and learn such things as a young Gentleman ought to know, alledging, that there was nothing more pre-emptory to youth, then to passe over those years which are apt to comprehend and learn, in foul obscurity of ignorance. In so much that a young man that will live in credit and reputation, ought to travel into strange countries, to be acquainted with foreign manners and governments, to learn tongues, to haunt Universities, and insinuate himself into the company of learned men. All this Father (quoth Perierio) is necessary for them that will have their lives famous, and death honourable.

Adventures in Love.

Old Camillo replied with Horace :

Caelum non animus mutant, qui trans mare currunt.

Men change not their manners, but the aire, that run from country to country, Perierio. And therefore I am not of their opinion that believe that men by far travelling from home, can attain to wisdom and humane prudence. For I think, that that is not gotten by running into far Countries, or by living in exile farre from home, but rather by communication and conversation of wise men. Yet Perierio seeing that here in this multitude of shepheards, little wisdom is to be learned, or little profit to experience and prudence to be reaped, I am content that thou go to the University of Salamanca, which is within this kingdom, and there to repeat such rudiments as thou hast begun at Rome, that thou mayst afterward be apt to greater studies, and to exorn and beautifie thy mind with the brightness of the liberal Sciences, which are the lights of humane understanding : Lastly, also to sense thy mind with wise and sage precepts of Philosophy, that after thou hast attained to the knowledge of natural things, thou mayst use moral Philosophy to moderate thy affections, and to follow that which thou knowest to be honorable and profitable, shunning the contrary. Then art thou fully armed to passe forward, & to travel into other countries to be acquainted with strange customs, or to learn diverse tongues ; otherwise what profiteth it to have coursed through sundry and strange regions, and to have seen many kingdoms, and manners of diverse Nations, if he that travelleth wanteth the ripeness of wit and judgement to reap profit by his being abroad : Therefore Perierio, think not that I disallow of travelling, but would have them that take that course, not to have their stomacks empty, but first guard themselves with the knowledge of Philosophy and humanity, and furnish themselves with provision necessary to such journeying. For I remember that Homer and Virgil to describe and form an
B heroicall

The Troublesome and Hard

heroical man adorned with all vertues, fained that Ulysses and Aeneas, had travelled through all the world; and not thinking this sufficient, they fained that they descended into hell, and went into the Elizian Fields, and knew those that were in them.

Pererio hearing his father alledge such points as made for his purpose, was exceeding glad, at length obtained his Fathers good will to leave the countrey and rustick company of Shepheards, to haunt the comely and seemly conversation of Schollers though his mind was more moved to his Lady then to the Univerfity, whither old Camilla determined to send him. And although Euphilia and Perina knew the colour wherewith he painted the occasion of his travelling, yet they reserved the whole sorrow to themselves, without declaring it to their father, fearing lest he should be discouraged and discomforted thereby, that he might hinder his health, and for grief fall into sickness, considering that old age is so subject to diseases, that the least cause in the world of discontent is sufficient to subvert the estates of health in an aged person.

CHAP. X.

How Pererio in his journey met with the fair Shepherdes Ismenia with whom he departed towards the Temple of *Diana*.



Pererio lifted up with the wings of hope, in a manner doubted not but his fortune would be more favourable then she had been, taking his leave of his father and his sisters, he betook himself to his journey intending to go to the Univerfity of Salamanca, as his father wished, but in such order y he would take y nearest way about, to see if Fortune would once again favour him with that sight which made such an impression in his heart, that neither continuance of time, nor contrariety of thought, was able to rase out the print thereof.

Thus Pererio having travelled six dayes through Woods,
dales,

Adventures in Love.

dales, bushes, greens, meadows, hills, valleys, and other solitary place, and yet had not met with that which he sought, nor seen any likelihood thereof, began to be wonderfully discomfited, and thought his pain vainly bestowed, seeing that Fortune was blinde and made no discretion of persons, but ever wrought by chance, bestowing her favours not where she would, but where they fell. Perierio thus discomfited, climbing on the top of a hill, heard a most sweet and melodious voyce sounding to a harp within a little wood where the high Oaks made a pleasant shadow. And drawing neer to the wood, he marked that it was the voice of a shepheard, who after she had ended her song, began thus to complaine of her misfortune. No doubt but all the stars that from the skies send light on the earth, have agreed and consented to my mishap and ill fortune; neither is there any thing on earth, that may yield me any comfort or consolation; but love which is subject to fear, turneth and converteth my sorrowfull soule into pure ice. Ah Fortune, how canst thou be so cruel? How canst thou forbear to succour a heart so distressed as mine, seeing that I am falsely suspected of disloyalty? And therefore I must accuse thee Lexander, thou art the man whom I must burthen with the cause of all my grief; unto thee do I discover and unfold my plaints, hard-hearted and cruell Lexander, in whom no pittie taketh place: For if thou werst of my side, I would not care though Heaven Earth Love and Fortune were against me, and enemies unto me. After that she had ended her complaint, she fetched a heaby sigh from her heart, and therewith wept so bitterly, that Perierio might easily perceibe that she was in that pittifull and lamentable taking, by reason that her husband falsely suspected her to be disloyal and unfaithful; so that he entered into the wood and found her sitting upon the grasse in the shade, neere to a delectable fountain, which issuing from the top of the hill, ran along a great part of the wood in divers places. But when she saw Perierio comming neer her, though she was something discontented that she was interpell'd amidst her

The Troublesome and Hard

passions ; yet beholding that he seemed by his behaviour to be some Shepheard of great account, being most courteously by him greeted, saluted him likewise with such modesty, that he began to misdoubt whether she were Alcida the promised spouse of Marcelio. (For he called to mind how that Marcelio had told him and his sisters, that Alcida had cloathed her self in the habit of a Shepheard, because she might be the harder to be found by him) and therefore spake thus unto her, Beautiful Shepheard (for so your coat bewrayeth, though your singular grace make me suspect that your calling is contrary to your colours,) I shall desire you not to be discomforted, though I have troubled you at this time, intruding my self into your company, for as I have discourteously offended, so shall you find me most ready to make amends for my boldnes. Gentle Shepheard (answered she) I am so forsaken of all comfort and solace, that good company cannot offend me, & therefore where no fault is committed there is nothing to be misconsidered of. And to put you out of suspicion, know that I am a Shepheard as wel in vocation as in habit, called Ilenia, and born neer to the Temple of Minerva, in the kingdom of Portugal : But I pray you what chance hath brought you hither into these Countries, or do you by hap dwell hereabout : In truth Ilenia, (quoth Periclio) my ill fortune hath brought me hither, for I neither dwell here, nor ever was in this place before ; I was born in Italy, but with my father and sisters transported to the fields annexed to the river Epla, about four or five dayes journey hence. I know the place very well, quoth Ilenia, it is not far from the pasture where fair Euphilia, so renowned in all that quarter, doth feed her sheep. I hear you name my sister (quoth Periclio) and am glad to have met with one that is not wholly unacquainted with our Family. What say you (quoth Ilenia ?) In truth unto a woman so distressed as I am, being desolate and forsaken of my loving husband, nothing could have hapned more wished for, then to have met with such honest and vertuous company as it hath pleased the Gods to comfort me withall, in dis-
reding

Adventures in Love.

reding your self towards these woods. And forasmuch as I am in mind to go to the Temple of Diana, if your journey be that way, I shall think my self among so many mishaps, to have received no small favour of Fortune. As for me (quoth Perierio) where I am I know not, nor whether I may go, and therefore am induced to think that Fortune beginneth to repent her self of her shrewdnesse, in that she hath favoured me with so worthy a guide as your self, to lead me forth of my straying errors to some place where I may enquire for directions in my journey. And I am most passing glad, that you go towards the Temple of Diana; of the sumptuousnesse whereof, I have heard such famous relation among the Shepheards, in the Village neer my fathers Farme, that I have a long time been moved with great desire to see the same. And therefore fair Shepheard, take which way you will, and Perierio will follow you. Ifmenia glad that this Shepheard was in her company, began to march, hoping befoze Phoebus should attain to his Western home, that they should reach to a Farme where she thought that they might be lodged that night: But to shun tediousnesse in their wearisome journey, Perierio desired her to recount and declare the cause of her grieve unto him. Ifmenia answered, that although the memory thereof could not but pierce her heart with the prick of exceeding sorrow, yet notwithstanding because he desired, whom she could not say nay, she was content to make a pastime of her misery. And thus in this ensuing Chapter began the Historie of her Tragedy.

The Troublesome and Hard

CHAP. XI.

How Lexander was enamoured on Ismenia, and how he was
crost in his love by his father Filene.



In our Village dwelled a certain Farmer that
had a comely youth to his son, in beauty pas-
sing all the Shepheards thereabout, being
called Alanio, who feeding his sheep in a
pasture ground, not far from ours used some-
times to come to me and keep me company
sitting in the shadow by me, and telling of tales, or passing
over the time with some other kind of honest recreation;
whereby at last grew such a familiar acquaintance betwixt
us, that love joyning our hearts together, we were not well
while we were separated the one from the others company.
To be short, he loved me, and was loved of me. There was
in the same Village a fair beautiful Shepheardesse called
Selvagia, who for her beauty might be compared with Venus
in the valley before Parys, when she won the golden Apple.
Of which Shepheard my Alanio became enamoured; where-
upon I to be revenged on him fained to favour Lexander his
deadly enemy. Which fained love of mine, at length by rea-
son of the acquaintance that grew between us, changed into
such pure and true love, that by reason thereof I am fallen
into the misery, in which I now finde my selfe at this pre-
sent.

Now continuing the history of my life, you shall know
that Lexanders father called Filene, sometimes frequented my
fathers house, by reason of certain businesse that my father
and he had betwixt them concerning Dren andayne, and
loving me although he was something old, yet he fell in love
with me and that so greatly, that he became foolish, mad and
frantick: He became so importunate unto me, and troubling
me above a thousand times, daily declared me his passions &
grief,

Adventure in Love.

grief, but all could not help : For I would never give care to his prattle, nor mark what he said, and though he had been much younger or lesse aged, and by many parts more perfect then he was, yet for him could I not have forgotten his son Lexander, who had so won my heart, that I had wholly given him the possession thereof. The old man knew not what friendship was between his son and me, for Lexander was so obeyant and dutifull, that he behaved himself secretly in wooing me, least his father knowing thereof should have rebuked him, and have occasion to be angry with him. And in like manner, was Lexander altogether ignorant of his fathers folly, who because he should not give his son example of lightnesse, took all the regard he might to his love from him. Nevertheless the foolish cocks-comb, ceased not to molest me with importunate requests to take him to my husband. He made me wonderful large proffers, he promised to give me many cloathes and jewels, and he sent me many Letters, hoping thereby to change my mind. In his time he had been a Shepheard most excellently qualified, eloquent in speech, and witty, which you may easily gather by a Letter which he wrote me, as I yet remember.

Filene to Iimonia.

FAir Shepheard, love is cause of all such fault as I can commit in writing unto, hoping that I have not committed any in loving you. And if perhaps my Letter be troublesome unto you, believe certainly, that I already fear the answer you will make. I have a thousand times signified and declared unto you, what affection I bear you, and in recompence thereof, you take pleasure in mocking me. You openly laugh at me to see me like to dye for love of you ; but as for me I am glad to see you laugh, though it be to my ruine and destruction ; For when I remember and think of my evil, and see that you take pleasure therein, rejoycing at my misery, I perceive that you will not remedy my grief, insomuch that it were an exceeding folly for me to regard your mocking, see-
ing

The Troublesome and Hard

ing that my life and death consisteth in you, to dispose of me as you please. If you ask why I should love you? I answer, because I am forced, and cannot but love you, inso much that though I might live and not love you, yet I had rather to dye, then so to live; for when I remember your graces and perfections, I cannot but judge them happier that die for love of you, then those that can behold you without admiring your exceeding vertues; for I cannot be perswaded that a man may die more happily, then he who loseth his life by reason of such heavenly beauty as yours, which hath so pierced my breast, that I am not mine own, but yours: for as soon as I saw you, I began to love, and to pine for grief. And if you say that I am to be blamed because I am amorous and yet old; in that respect I sue for remedy unto you, seeing that I have not so greatly offended in loving you, as in knowing you so late; For I acknowledge that I am old, and I am not a little grieved that this my pain is not as ancient as the course of my age; and I am sorry that I might not have loved you from the first day that I was born as well as since the first hour that I saw you, certifying you that this love shall dure and continue till death. Marvel not sweet, to see me grey and wrinkled; and though you surpass me in valour, yet I think it but small reason that a man should lose his pay and salary under this colour, that he is an old Souldier. The new built houses are not comparable to the ancient buildings of *Rome*; and commonly all men alwayes say, that among all things, the old is the best. Love would not untill this present time make me feel the pinching pain of amorous passions, because he well knew that affection was more firm, and fancy less fickle in an old man as I am, then in tender age, where every look is love, and every face a new fancy. I am firm and constant to love you for ever; and old, never to be loved as long as I live. Young men that say they love, are double and subtle; they faine, but not fancy; their forehead is marked with *Venus* badge, but their heart never felt *Cupids* shaft. And when they plead for mercy, alledging that they dye for love, then are they less subject to passion & most free from fancy. Their changeable affection, is assured liberty; their passion, pastime; their love, a custome and not a pain. Think not sweet, that I am like
like

Adventures in Love.

like the amorous youth, who having received a favour of his mistress, vaunteth and boasteth thereof to all the world ; for though I had received ten thousand, I should be as constant and firme in keeping them secret : But as I see you disposed and bent to work my death, I fear that I shall endure much torment, and have occasion to say little, and brag less ; yet the chiefest favour whereof I may boast, is to die for the love of *Ismenia*. With what great reason may I find fault with the time, considering that I who love you most, am least esteemed. But alas, I loved you too late, and seeing I was not born at the same time that you were, it is reason that I should dye for love of you. Ah fair Shepherdes, had my Fortune been such, that I might have been of your time, I had had that which had been sufficient to win your love, and to deserve favour of you ; for though it becommeth no man to blaze his owne praises, yet affection forceth me to say, that among all the young men of our time, none might compare with me, at dancing, leaping, foot-ball, hand-ball, bowle, bow, cithren, pipe, flute, and all such kinds of exercise, wherewith our Countrey youths recreate themselves, and win the hearts of their mistresses. But (ah cruell chance !) what serveth either that which is, or that which hath been, unto him poor wretch, that is buried in the bowels of forgetfulness, because he is neer unto his death ? In the mean time, may it please you to consider by that which I have said, that the glory of your perfection which at this present maketh you famous to all the countrey, shall finally fade, as the pride of the sweet violet decayeth with the fall of the Sommer. Now you are hard as a rock, and cruel, but when you shall be overtaken with age, then shall you want the liberty and force wherewith now you disdain me. For this is the revenge which love taketh of you, that he then bringeth you into deadly pain and torments, when hope beginneth to fail you.

Fileue sent me this Letter and many moze, with other Songs and Sonnets, wherewith if I had bin as greatly moved as contented and delighted, he had judged himself happy, and had been ill wedded ; but it was impossible to finde any

The Troublesome and Hard

means whereby the picture and image of my beloved Alexander, might be rased out of my heart ; For he so pleased me, and was so constant and perfect in love, that his wil and mine was but one will, his word and mine one word, and his heart and mine one heart. Never did he perform less in deed, then in word he promised. His doings were alwaies correspondent to his sayings. And as for me, what Alexander liked, I could not dislike ; and whatsoever displeased him, was horrible to Ilinenia. In this pleasant life and sweet concord having passed certain years, we purposed to confirm and establish our content and to signe our wished desire with the seale of honest and chaste marriage. And although Alexander befoze he would take me to his wife, intended to speak unto his father first, and to ask his consent as it beſeemed an obedient son to do, yet when I had advertised him how that his father would not be willing to agree unto that match, by reason of the foolish desire he had himself to take me in marriage he esteeming more of his own content and the estate of his own life, then of his due obeysance towards his father, concealed the matter. So that this unfortunate marriage, was made with the consent and good will of my father, at whose house the wedding was kept, where there was such feasts, games, sports and pastimes held, in respect of our marriage, that it was spoken of in all the Boroughs and Villages thereabout. When the amorous old man knew that his own son had depriued him of his love, he became so furious against Alexander and me, that he hated us both, and abhorred us worse then death it self, in such manner that he would never after see us, or come nêr us.

On the other side, a certain shepheardess of the same vilage, called Felisarde, who so fancied Alexander, that she almost fell mad for love of him (who made no account of her by reason that he loved me so well, and because she was an elderly Maid and nothing well complexioned,) seeing that he whom she so dearly loved had wedded me, almost fell into despair. In so much that our marriage bred us two deadly enemies. The angry old man to have occasion to disinherit his son, determined

Adventures in Love.

ned to marry some fair young woman, by whom he might have children; but though he was exceeding rich, yet all the Shepherds of our country disdained to be married unto him, except Felisarde onely, who to have opportunity to allure my husband to her unlawfull and dishonest lust, (for she had not as yet forgotten the love of Alexander) willingly took old Filene to her husband. She had not long time been married, but she began to practise meanes to gain the love of my husband, and for that intent she sent a Maid that served her, called Sylveria unto Alexander, to tell him that if he would grant her her will, she would obtain pardon for him from his father; and besides, she would do him much pleasure, and shew him great favour; but she could never corrupt him with all her large proffers and fair promises to consent to her wicked will; wherefore she considering that she was so despised and so little regarded of Alexander, began mortally to hate him, and endeavoured continually to move her husband more and more to indignation against his son. Neither was she content with that, but determined also to practise a strange and villanous treason against us both; for she had in such a manner won the heart of Sylveria her maid by reason of her flattering promises and other favours which she had done her, that she was ready to do whatsoever she would have her, although it had been against Alexander, whom she respected for the time that she had served in his fathers house. So that they secretly consulted among themselves, how they might be revenged of me, and at the hour appointed for the execution thereof, Sylveria went forth of the Village, and coming to a certain Green neere the River, where Alexander used to feed his Sheep, she stepped unto him, and with a troubled countenance as if she had some matter of great importance to tell him, spake unto him in this manner. Ah Alexander, how well and prudently have you done in eschuing the love of your wicked mother in law, unto which although I sometimes excited you, yet know that I did so by reason of her importunate requests; but now I know how the matter standeth, she shall not be able any more to

The Troublesome and Hard

make me the messenger of her dishonesties, I am acquainted with some of her secrets that concern her nearly, and are such, that if you know them, although your father be so cruell unto you, yet would you not leave to hazard your life for his honour. I will not say any more, because I know you to be so wise, and indued with such discretion, that it shall not be necessary for me to use many words and reasons in your behalf. Alexander being astonished to hear her talk in this order, misdoubted some dishonesty of his step-mother. But to know the truth, and to be thoroughly informed, he desired Sylveria openly to shew him all the matter, and to let him hear what it was that she knew of Felisarde her mistress. At first she would be payed, seeming to be unwilling to disclose a matter so secret; but at length she declaring that unto Alexander, which he demanded of her, and which she so greatly desired to tell him, stuffed him with a lie most notably well forged and contrived. Saying, and considering that it is a matter of great weight both unto your self and your father Filene in like manner, to know that which I know: I will most plainly declare it unto you, assuring my self that you will not let any man know how that I have discovered this secret unto you. You shall understand, that your mother in law Felisarde hath purposed to defile your fathers bed with a certain shepheard, whose name I will not tell you, saving it lyeth in you to know him if you please; for if you will come this evening and enter into that place where I will lead you, you shall finde the Traitors with the Adulterer in your fathers house, for they have so appointed it, because that Filene your father doth this night lye abroad, and doth not returne till to morrow about midday, by reason of certain affaires moving him thereto. Therefore prepare your self (if you will follow my counsaile) and about eleven of the clock at night, come unto me to our house, where I will bring you to the place, where you may easily do that which you shall think convenient for the honoz and credit of your father; and by meanes whereof, you may also be reconciled unto him. Sylveria said all this, dissembling

Adventures in Love.

sembling so cunningly, that Alexander resolved to put himself in danger to be revenged of him that thought so fouly to dishonour his father: And thus the traitress Sylveria, glad that she had deceived my husband by the counsel of Felisarde, returned home, to let Felisarde know the effect of her talk with Alexander, and what he appointed to do.

CHAP. IX.

How Alexander, through the treachery of Felisarde and Sylveria, would have slain his father, and what ensued thereon.

THe obscure night had not so soon bayled the aire with the curtain of darkness, but Alexander coming to the Village, and taking a dagger which he had gotten by the decease of his Uncle Palemon, went just at eleven of the clock at night to his fathers house, where Sylveria expected him, according as they had ordained. Where was ever such treason seen? Or where such malice thought? She took him by the innocent hand, and ascending the staires as softly as they might, she led him to the chamber doore where Filene his father lay with Felisarde asleep; when she had brought him there, she said, Lo Alexander now are you in place where you ought to have your heart and hand required in such a case. Enter into this chamber, and there you shall finde your step-mother in bed with the adulterer. With that she got away, and retired as swift as she could. Alexander being deceived by that dissembling traitress gave faith to her words, and encouraging himself, drew his Runyarde, and having thrust open the doore with his foot, entered into the Chamber like a furious man, and being enraged, with a loud voyce uttered these words: Traytor, I will presently make thee dye, the lobes of Felisarde shall but little abaile thee; nay they shall be the cause of thy death and ruine. And so saying, altogether enraged, and not knowing who was in bed with Felisarde his

Step

The Troublesome and Hard

Stepmother, lifted up his hand to clap his weapon into his fathers brest; but as Fortune would have it, old Filene knew his son by reason of the light which was in the chamber, and thinking that Alexander purposely came to kill him, because he had so ill used him both in word and deed, sat upright in his bed, and crossing his arms spake thus unto Alexander. Ah my son, what cruelty moveth thee to become the butcher of thy natural father? Call your judgement, and enter into your wits again, and seek not to shed my blood, or tearm my life with so tragical an end. For if I have been something rigorous unto you, and unnaturally dealt with you being my son, I crave pardon, intending to become most favourable unto you ever hereafter. When Alexander perceived the treason of Sylveria, which had almost been cause that he had slain his own father, he fell into such an extasie, that his force failed him, and his dagger fell out of his hand without his knowledge; for he was so amazed of the treason which he had committed against his father (had not God provided the contrary) that he could not feel his weapon drop out of his hand, but altogether troubled and confounded like a man that was bereft of all his senses, went presently out of the chamber, and out of his house. Felisarde knowing what should chance that night, watched for the coming of Alexander, who was no sooner entred in the chamber, but she leaping out of her bed fled into a more inward and back room, where barring up the door, she freed and exempted her self from the fury and anger of Alexander. But when she saw that he was departed, and by reason thereof she out of danger returning to her bed where Filene lay, trembling at the peril which he had so wonderfully escaped, she began to stir up her husband against Alexander his son, exclaiming in this manner.

O Filene, now may you see what a son you have, and know that to be most true which I so often have admonished you, concerning his evil nature and inclination.

O cruel Alexander! O traitor Alexander! how commeth it to passe that Heaven doth not confound thee? Why doth not the
the

Adventure in Love.

the earth open and swallow thee up into her bowels? why do not the brute beasts tear thee to pieces? and why do not all men persecute thee, and punish thee according to thy heinous actions. Accursed be thy marriage, accursed be thy disobedience, accursed be thy loves, and accursed be thy Ilenia, seeing that she hath incited thee to execute such a cruel act and abominable deed. Ah Traitor, thou hast not chastised the shepherd Alanio, who unto thy great dishonour and shame, hath dishonestly haunted and entertained thy wife Ilenia, whom she loveth better then thy self, and yet thou wouldst kill & massacre thy owne father, who alwayes hath made great account of thy life, honour and credit. Ah unhappy father! Ah unfortunate old man! what fault hast thou committed so great, as to be slain and murdered by thy son? by him whom thou hast engendred? whom thou hast brought up and nourished? And for whom thou hast suffered a thousand troubles? Now therefore take heart, cease henceforth to bear him any more love or affection; commit him to the rigor of the law, that he may be punished as he hath deserved; for if he that hath committed so execrable an offence escape due punishment, every disobedient child will be emboldened and unfeared, and thine at length will in good earnest lay hands on thee to shorten the course of thy odious life.

Sorrowful and troubled Filene, altogether amazed and fearful, hearing his wifes voyce, and weighing the horrible treason which his son had thought to commit upon his person became so angry, that taking up the dagger which Alexander (as I told you) had let fall out of his hand, went forth as soon as the day appeared, to assemble the Iustices of peace and chieftest of the Village together in the criminal Court, where he with abundance of teares flowing out of his eyes, spake unto them in this manner.

I call God to witnesse (most excellent shepherds) that I am so grieved with that which I am to declare unto you that I greatly fear, lest my spirit and breath faile me before I have opened the matter unto you. Especially seeing it is such
that

The Troublesome and Hard

that I may be esteemed most cruel, in that I publickly complain of my son, expounding his misdoings and wickednes unto you, which being so strange, that I know not how it may be accordingly punished and chastised, I beseech you to see what is convenient to be done in this case, to prescribe him such and so just a punishment, that other children may thereby take a manifest example how to behave themselves towards their parents. We know very well, that I have nourished him carefully, and maintained him as a father ought to do, brought him up painfully, taught him and instructed him, and what trouble, paines, and labour I have had with him, what counsel I continually have given him and how mildly I have rebuked and chastised him in his youth. Now is he sorely against my will married to the Shepherdes Ilmenia, and because I have rebuked him, therefore instead of revenging himself on the Shepheard Alanio, who shamefully entertaineth (as all the Village knoweth) the said Ilmenia his wife, he hath turned his rage against me, intending to murder me: We found meanes the last night to enter into my house, yea into my bed-chamber where I lay and slept with my wife Felisarde, and there with this poyard would have slain me: and verily had dispatched me, if God of his grace had not taken his force from him, in such sort, that he could not hold the dagger in his hand, but was constrained to let it fall, and so confounded and bereft of his senses, departed without executing his damnable enterprize. And this is it that I had to say, thus is the matter verily passed, as my beloved spouse can better inform you. But for as much as I certainly know that my son Lexander had not taken upon him to commit such an horrible treason against me his father, unlesse he had been counselled and provoked thereto by the inticements and allurements of his wife Ilmenia, I beseech you to perpend and weigh what ought herein to be done, to the end that my son may be punished for his offence, and false Ilmenia also, as well for the counsel which she hath given unto her husband, as for her lightnesse and dishonest love towards Alanio.

Elene

Adventures in Love.

Filene had scarce ended his tale, but the people began to murmur and make such a noise, that it seemed that the whole Village should have presently sunk in the ground; in so much that the hearts of all the Shepheards were troubled, and all conceived generally mortal hatred against Alexander. Some said, that it was pittie he should live till Phoebus had reached to his Meridian seat; others said, that he ought to be cast into the River; others, that it was pittie if he were not burned quick; and others, that he ought to be committed to the mercy of the cruel and savage beasts: finally, there was no one person that was not stirred up against him. Besides, they did likewise all marvel of that which Filene falsely alleged concerning my life; but they were nevertheless all of them so amazed at the fact of Alexander, that they did not greatly hearken to the accusation and impeachment which Filene most falsely (by reason of Felisarde his wifes deceitful speech) had made against me.

When Alexander had heard what his father had deposed against him, in the Court of criminal cause, in the presence of the Justices and audience of all the people, he was wonderfully grieved; & besides, when he understood what his father had said against me, he conceived such exceeding sorrow, that it passeth my ability to express the same. And thence cometh all my grief, thence took my evil it offspring, that was the cause and beginning of all my labours, travel, pain, and sorrows. For my dear husband Alexander, remembering that in times past I did love, & was loved of Alanio, and that love forgotten and dead, oftentimes may be renewed and revived again, because he saw that the Shepheard Alanio (whom I could not abide to see, & whom I abhorred for Alexanders sake) was yet amorous of me, daily shewing me such curtesies and importunate cherishments, he thought verily, and perswaded himself that all was most certain and true which his father had spoken of me in the face of the world. In such manner, that he despairing as well for the treason committed unto him by Trairess Sylvia, as for the suspicion which he conceived of
me,

The Troublesome and Hard

me, departed incontinently from the village: since which time he was never seen there, nor any news brought what is become of him. And as I knew that he was departed, and the cause wherefore, by report of certain shepherds his friends, (unto whom he had rehearsed the whole matter,) I likewise left the village to seek him, and intend not to rest any where, untill I find my sweet spouse, to the end that I may excuse and clear my self unto him, of that fault which is falsely imputed to me, and which he suspecteth to be most true. It is long since I have wandzed up and down through the world to seek my husband and although I have sought him and inquired for him in most places, and especially all the chiefest and principall farmes, houses, villages, and boroughs of the country, yet can I not hear any thing of him. The best adventure that I have had in this my endlesse voyage, was, that two days after I departed from our village, in a certain valley, I met the traitresse Sylveria, who having heard of the voluntary exile and banishment of my husband Lexander, went after him to discover her treason unto him, repenting that she had so highly offended him. But she had not as yet found him: and as soon as she saw me, she approached near me, and falling flat on her face, cried me mercy, and at my will, rising, she opened the whole matter unto me. Whereof I was not a little glad, thereby understanding how that abominable treason was practised against us. And although I was but a weak woman yet I could have unlaced the traitresse members, and teared her to piece-meal with mine own hands. yet I withheld my self because she onely could remedy my harm, by reporting her own mischief. I willed her diligently to seek my beloved Lexander, and to give him notice how all the matter was passed: and therewith on the sudden, I left her going one way, and I came another, to the end that either of us might find him.

Thus gentle Shepherd, have you heard the plain and true rehearsall of all my miseries and calamities. And for as much as Phoebus is not yet above the ocean, nor like to reach to his
Western

Adventures in Love.

Western bed so soon: if in like manner you (as I have done) will take pleasure in reporting the cause and off-spring of your wandring errors, I doubt not but we shall reach to the place (where I hope we shall rest this night) by that time that you have added the conclusion to your narration. Alas (quoth Periclio) the conclusion must needs follow quickly, where the narration is sooner ended then begun. For all the speciallity that I can use in declaring the cause of my misery, is this generall rule, that I know that I am most miserable. For I love, but whom I know not: and that is all I can say concerning my self.

Periclio had scarce ended his words, but Ismenia made signe that he should hearken to a certain voice which she thought to have heard in the woods; for there was a Gentlewoman in the habit of a shepheard not far from the place where they were, which thus complained of her mishap.

Oh Fortune, have I thus long had thee in estimation and yeelded thee such honour; and dost thou reward me with continuall and never ceasing trabel? Oh unthankful and ingratefull Goddesse! If a Goddesse. For Gods are just, constant, mercifull; thou inconstant, cruel and most unjust: by the rule of contraries, therefore art thou no Goddesse. Oh foolish wench be wise at last being taught by experience, and instead of worshipping fortune, curse her, detest her, and despise her; and persuade thy self that the Gods which are jealous, and therefore wrathfull, and incensed with anger against those that deprive them of the honour due unto them, and give unto others, have thrown thee into this Charybdis of miseries, to punish and chastise thy hainous offence committed against them in worshipping that Idoll fortune. Wherefore O heavenly powers, Brisilla bendeth her knees and foldeth her hands, asking pardon of heaven for her error. She repenteth her of her ignorance, she bewaileth her folly. Pardon mercifull Gods, pardon me, and cease to work your vengeance upon a poor distressed virgin, that is desolate and bereft of all hope and consolation, pleadeth for mercy from heaven. And with that she wept so

The Troublesome and Hard

bitterly, that Ilmenia and Perierio coming unto her could not see her face, it was so veiled with tears. Likewise she pulled her golden hair, by whole locks off her head with her hands, which were so white and so delicately fashioned that it was a marvel to see such tender hands so cruelly prey upon so brave a head. Ilmenia therefore not able to behold such an unmerciful spectacle, stepped unto her and held her hands, which so furiously teared her glistering hair, saying, Ah distressed shepherdes, seek not your own ruine, wrong not your self, and fight not against your own person; for the torment and grief which you suffer by reason of your misfortune, is augmented and enlarged, not diminished, or slackened by these meanes.

Therefore (fair shepherdes) hold your hands, & cease from vexing your self. You live not alone in aduersity, for we are not so happy but that we may worthily complain of Fortunes sicklenesse. Company in misery is no small solace, comfort your self therefore, and with us hope, that the Gods will at last be moved to mercy, and appoint the end of our miseries. Ah gentle Sheheard (answered Brisilla, for that was her name) where despair ruleth there hope is banished. Nay, quoth Perierio, embrace hope, and despair dareth not approach. The extremity of my case (replied Brisilla) forbiddeth me to take hold of hope. Psea, but through magnanimity and courage (quoth Perierio) may you overcome and banquish your extremity. And therefore (sweet sheheard) let not your heart faint, nor your courage slacken, but with an invincible heart suffer not any extremity though never so supream, to brave your mind; and though you be conquered of all your enemies, yet yield not the liberty of thy mind to the proudest Champion that either Fortune or fate can arme against you.

Brisilla marking that both Perierio and Ilmenia were persons of estimatiō, thought the to be some of the chiefest shepherds therabout, & therefore as soon as she could contain from weeping, thanked the for their comfortable persuasions; for she received great consolation in that she had met with them taking great
delight

Adventure in Love.

delight in beholding their beauty: and asking them whether they travelled, *Ismenia* told her, that she with *Perierio* were bound toward the temple of *Diana*, hoping that the Lady president of the same temple would remedy their harm, and give them such instruction, that they should have cause to hope for the end of their troubles in short time. *Brissila* hearing that, was passing glad, and began to clear her eyes from the water which continually ran down her face. And having chased away such impediments as hindered her speech, by reason of her sorrow, she spake to *Perierio* and *Ismenia* with such an excellent grace, that her words seemed to flow from her mouth, as running water issueth out of the fountain. Insomuch that they did not doubt, but that she was some courtly Princess, though she covered her body with the vesture of a country lass.

CHAP. XIII.

How *Periander* Prince of Albion, and *Brissila* daughter to the Duke *Florindos*, became enamoured of each other, and what ensued.



After they had had some talk of each others fortunes and troubles, *Brissila* at the request of *Perierio* and *Ismenia*, began to unfold the cause of her travel, making a copious and large narration of the course of all her life, permitting this Exordium.

Loving shepherds, though I fear that I shall not be able to accomplish that accordingly, which I have undertaken to do, mistrusting that I shall both lack time to end the history of my life, when I have begun it, & also discretion to contrive the same into some order and method my memory being weak by reason whereof, I may chance to forget, and slip over many things; yet hoping that you will accept of my good will and readinesse in pleasuring you, I will endeavour as neare as I can, and as truly as my memory will permit, to

The Troublesome and Hard

report and lay down the whole circumstance of my case unto you.

I was borne in the famous Ile of Albion, where my father was generall Commander over all the Kings Forces abroad when the King was at home. And if his Majesty chanced to follow the Camp in his proper person then was my father Viceroy and supreme Governour at home. I had not lived six years, but my father venturing himself in the midst of his enemies, and pressing into the very bowells of their Camp, slew the King of Gaule with his own hand, and therewith gave the enemy a terrible overthrow, and his King a great victory, but it cost him his life. For after he had slaine the King, there were so many knights that besought him to revenge the death of their King that he was not able to escape the hour which his destinies had appointed him.

When the King was informed how that my father had obtained him such a wonderful victory with the price of his life, knew not whether he had greater cause to rejoyce for the overthrow of his enemy, or to weep for the loss of such a valiant Soldier, and faithful subject. Wherefore he in proper person came to my fathers Palace, and himself brought my Mother the newes of my Fathers honourable death, comforting us all with such friendly speeches, that we could not have bene grieved for his death, if Nature had not forced us to lament his losse. Yet howsoever we were grieved, the King caused my Father to be buried most honourably, and erected such a magnificent Tombe at his owne cost, that he gave a sufficient Token to all his Countrey, how greatly he esteemed of Duke Florindo, (for so was he called.) Within foure yeares after, my Mother the Duchesse, being an aged woman dyed, and was buried under the same Tombe with my Father. And the King considering that I was young (about ten yeares of age) and that I was onely heire to the Dukedome, to the end that I might be carefully brought up and well looked unto, he caused me to be brought to the Court, where I waighted on the Queen, who made as
great

Adventures in Love.

great account of me as if I had been her daughter. And to the end that I might perceive the love and affection she and her husband the King did bear me, I was honoured with the title of a Duchesse, and disposer of all my fathers signiories, and Lordships, yea & of the Dukedom also, at mine own pleasure: neither did the King withhold from me any part of the revenues thereof; so that I lived in as great joy as any mortal maid might; for I wanted nothing that I was able to think of. I was loved and favoured both of the King and Queen, and therefore honoured of all the country. But alack, this my felicity was too great to be perpetuall; and I was seated too high to escape the stormy blasts of adversity. The tall Oaks are shaken with the winds, and the climbing steeple rent with the thunder clap, where the low brambles feel not the fury of the wind, nor the base cottage the force of the storm. The tops of high mountains are chopped through Apollos heat, where the low plains and green meadows are beautified with flowers, and being cherished with Phœbus rays, produce sweet herbs, and yeeld food to the shepherds flocks. And so poor Brissilla lifted up to high estate, triumphing in Court, and glorying in her happinesse; is brought in this most miserable torment. Whereas many simple maids and countrey wenches enjoy sweet content, and passe their lives in supream pleasure. You shall therefore understand (loving shepherds) that I being 15 years of age or thereabout, the young prince was sent for by the King from the University; for the Queen had purposed to marry me unto him. Who being about eight or ten moneths younger then my self, was thought too young to be married so soon; but the Queen fearing least some one or other (for there was many noble mens sons of great houses and high descent in the Court) should win my heart and love, used the matter so, that few or none could have my company but her son, whom she wished to be matched with none but my self. And in truth by reason of our daily conversation at length grew such familiarity and acquaintance between Periander and me, that love creeping into our hearts united

The Troublesome and Hard

us together, and of two bodies made but one heart, one will, one desire, one pleasure, and one mind. Insomuch that the Queen, yea and all the Court, began to perceiue the affection that we did bear one to another. Suppose (shepheards) what a pleasure it was both to the King, his wife and most of all the noblemen of the realm, yea generally to all men in the country, to see such likelihood of a marriage, which they so earnestly wished and greedily desired. And by that time that Periander had reached to the age of eighteen years, the King fearing least delay might breed danger, and my affection to change by his sons mind alter, called us both into his chamber and in presence of the Queen his wife spake unto us after this manner, intending to try our constancy.

Farvell not my son Periander, nor you young Duches, that I have sent for you hither, for I will not keep close the cause thereof. Know therefore that my pleasure is, that you Periander love not Lady Brisil any longer; have I sent for you from the Uniuersity to court your mothers maids? Did I call you to the Court to learn how to play Mars in the field, and do you take upon you so young, to serue Venus in the chamber, you are but a boy yet Periander, and therefore unfit for love. And you Lady Brisil, have we shewed you such friendly entertainment in the Court, and honored you with such an high estate, to allure our son to fancy you, where I purposed to marry him to the King of Portugals eldest daughter, & heir apparent to the crown of Portugal: thy father the deceased Duke, was a man of great desert, but his daughter not so worthy as to become a Queen. We contented with the title of a Duchesses Lady Brisil, and reach not so high a bough as a crown; for thou mayest both misse of thy purpose, and incur danger to lose their fauour, in whom consisteth your welfare. Therefore I exhort you both to leaue these familiar meetings, these louely Salues, which you giue one to another in the morning, & courteous good nights you bid one another in the evening; also those pleasant smiles, passionate looks and continual winks where with you fauour one another, will I haue you not to vs any longer.

Adventures in Love.

longer. And to be short, I forbid you to use company one with the other any more. Periander hearing his father concluded so peremptory against his bliss, answered. Then father, my Lord and Sovereign if it please your Majesty to separate me from the conversation of Duches Brissil, I beseech you to give me leave to separate my self from the company of all men; and with that he drew his dagger, and would have wounded his loving heart with the sharp point thereof, had not his Mother the Queen hindered his intent, holding his arme. As for me, I was so perplexed both at the Kings words and his rashness, that I fell on the ground in such manner, that the king himself thinking that I had been dead, ran from his chair of estate, and lifted me from the ground, calling Lady Brissil, speak, speak Lady Brissil, young Queen of Albion, speak but one word. But I lay in that extasie a good hour. All which time the King, the Queen, and all that were present, (but especially Periander) were so grieved that none of them could abstain from weeping. The King called, the Queen hallowed in mine eares, with a lamentable voyce, and Periander almost breathless, being choaked with exceeding sorrow which he conceived, could neither call, nor cry. At length with much ado, I came to my self, and stood upright, to the joy of all those that had heard of my mischance. Whereupon the King told us that he had used his former words, but to learne whether our love was firm, intending if I liked of Periander, and Periander of me, as of man and wife, to marry us together. To be short, before we departed from the King, he sent for some of the chiefest Noblemen, and in their presence, Periander made promise never to marry other woman then my self, and in like manner affirmed that I was content to have him to my husband, and would die rather then be married to any other. So that our marriage was presently concluded, and the wedding to be a month after.

The Troublesome and Hard

CHAP. XIV.

How *Mafficourt* betrayed the Prince *Periander*, and sold him to the *Moors* for a Gally-slave, and the sorrow that was made for his absence.



Imagine, loving Shepheards, what joy there was through the country, when it was reported that the young Prince and the young Dukes were promised, and should be married within the space of one month? Consider also, how happy and blessed that *Periander* and I thought our selves to be, when we had obtained that with the King and Queens consent and good will, which we feared that they would never have granted? but envy the sorest enemy that wageth warre against content, soon made a breach of our felicity, into a woful and pitiful mishap.

For there was a young Knight in the Court called *sir Mafficourt*, being son to the Earle Doraster, who was so in love with me (though he had not as yet declared it to me) that for me he had willingly made exchange of all that he had. This *sir Mafficourt* having of the contract between us, took it so heavily, that he almost dispaired. But considering that grief or sorrow could not prebail to remedy his harm, took courage, and hoped to find means by subtilty and craft to hinder the marriage, which he practised with all speed. The Earle his father was Admirall of the sea, by means whereof, this young Knight had great acquaintance with divers Captains of the ships of war, and other Pilots and shipmasters: among whom he had one especially bound unto him named *Barfalis*, whose service he durst imploy in the weightiest matter of the world, and unto whom he might have communicated the chiefeest secrets he had.

To be short, he sent for this *Barfalis* and told him, that if ever he would requite the courtesies and friendship which he had

Adventures in Love.

had received of him, that now the time was come and occasion offered, wherein he might shew the thankfulness and gratefulness of his mind. The Captain Pilot answered, that he wished not for any better hour then that in which he might be imployed in his service. protesting, that whatsoever he would have him do, he should find him most ready to execute his pleasure were it right or not, so it consisted in his power, being ready to hazard his life to do him service; whereupon Sir Malsicourt desired him to cause a ship to be well rigged and furnished with provision, and to lay Anchore at the haven of Dover, where he should expect his coming, and then he should further understand his pleasure. Which Bartalis promised to do though he wist not why, nor to what end. For Sir Malsicourt being something politick, and considering that mens mindes are fickle, and subject to alteration, would not as yet disclose his intent unto the Pilot, fearing least he might have been moved to betray him before the time that he purposed to execute his treason. But after he had charged the Pilot to expect his coming to the Haven of Dover, he sought occasion to talk with the young Prince as soon as he might. And the next morning having heard that Periander intended to ride a hunting, prepared himself, to meet the Prince as he rode towards the Park. Periander glad of his company (for there was great familiarity between them) and Sir Malsicourt was wonderfully well beloved of him, began to be merry with him, and to talk with him according to his accustomed manner. At length Sir Malsicourt taking occasion to speak of the Sea, I remember (quoth he) that your Grace oftentimes hath been earnest with me to go to Sea, and to see what rule Neptune keepeth in his kingdom. The weather is now most pleasant for that purpose, inasmuch that if it will please your Grace now to recreate your self in beholding such pleasure as the calms Sea can yield, I am ready to accompany your Grace to Dover, where I have a most gallant Pinnace, as excellent and fit for our turne as any vessel in all the Realme. Periander thanked him, and appointed

The Troublesome and Hard

to ride with him the next morrow towards the haven. As soon as he came to the Court, he told us that he had purposed to go to Sea, and asked me whether I would give him leave to be away five or six dayes. And although I was very sorry and unwilling that he should go, fearing lest any mischance might happen unto him, yet seeing he so desired to go, I seemed to be more willing then I was, lest he should be grieved, and leave his pleasure for feare of displeasing me.

The next morning sir Maslicourt being come, their fall broken, and their horse ready, they rode merrily from the Court; but alas, I was not without cause discomforted, neither did I forecast such danger as hapned in vain; for the traitor Maslicourt, as soon as the Prince was aboard the Pinnace, called the Pilot Bartalis aside, and gave him certain chaines of gold and other sumptuous jewels, mounting to the value of ten thousand crowns, promising him a far better reward. And this is it I request at your hands (quoth he) that when we be on the sea (seeing the wind serbeth for Spain) you should saile into the Spanish sea, and being there, on the sudden lay hold on the Prince, and my self also, as if you were enraged against us, and sought to bereave us both of our lives. What done, you shall hide me into some odde corner of the Ship, where the Prince shall not be able to see me, and make him believe that you have cast me into the Sea, and then arriving at some Spanish haven, sell him to the Moors that have the government of the Gallies, to be a Galley-slave, but first put off his clothes, and apparel him as if he were one of the Ship-boyes; then shall we be rid of him, and he never like to escape out of their hands. Bartalis promised to do all this, and performed no less indeed. For Periander was sold unto the Galley-slaves, sir Maslicourt travelled into Spain and Italy, and Bartalis upon a certain night, set his Pinace on fire, and burned all his Mariners, saving himself in a Ship boat, and in a Merchants he returned to Albion. Whither being arrived, he came presently to the Court, and brought us newes of those that we so long had wished to hear of. For they had him
away

Adventures in Love.

away ten moneths, and though the King had sent out divers Ships, and the Admiral himself also coursed through the seas, yet could we hear nothing either of the Kings or Admirals sonne. Whereby we supposed that they were dead, though we hoped the contrary. But Barfalis that traitorous Pilot told us, that as soon as they had entred the mouth of the Sea, the winde rose, and such a tempest was spread over all the Sea, that the Pinnace being beaten with the waves on every side, rent in pieces and sunck presently. All that he could say of Periander and Massicourt, was, that he saw them both together leap out of the Pinnace, and that the Knight with a small mast in his hands swome up and down whither the streame drove him, and that the Prince casting himself upon one of the hatches, tossed up and down the waves. All the rest that were in the Ship, he said that they sunck with the Pinnace, and himself escaped alone in the Ship-boate. This traytor Barfalis received no small gift of the King and of me, (although his newes was so evil) because he told us that he saw the Prince flitting up and downe the waves upon one of the ship-hatches, hoping that he was somewhere cast on land, though perhaps so far that he could not so soon return home to Albion.

I will not here make mention what a living death or dying life I poor wretch led, all the while that Periander was absent, sometimes perswading my self that he was dead, and sometimes hoping to see him and enjoy his presence; but this I will leave to your discretion (loving shepheards,) and passe on forwards in the declaration of this lamentable history. You shall therefore know, that after Barfalis had been six moneths at home the Admirals son returned to his fathers house attired like a ship slave, and told us such a tale of his wonderfull adventure, how he was cast on the shores side with his mast-piece, and how he fared on the land, that not the Court onely, but all the Country also admired at his hard fortune. But concerning the Prince, he could tell no more then the other traitor had done, yet
to

The Troublesome and Hard

to give a colour of likelihood, he agreed to the same report which the Villain Barfalis had made. And though my hope was small, yet I took the greater courage, because sir Massicourt that Arch-traitor had escaped such dangers and troubles as he made us beleefe. And howsoever my young heart strived against sorrow and grief, yet the Queen being old and weak of nature, consumed for very grief, and dyed. Who being buried and intombed, what mourning, what grief, and what sorrow was made, not in the Court onely, but generally over all the Countrey, I am not able to expresse. And as for my selfe though I was very sorry for her death, yet was the grief and pain which I suffered for the absence of Periander, so great and exceeding that I could scarce think up any other thing, and therefore the sooner forgate the death of the Queen.

CHAP. XV.

How the traitor *Massicourt* slew himself because he could not obtain the love of fair *Brißilla*: also how the King was enamoured on her.



At this time began the traitor *Massicourt* to make love unto me, and to cast such passionate looks upon me, at all times that he passed by me, or came into the place where I was, that I could not chuse but perceiue that he was becom darling to Venus, by the forcing dart of her Son Cupid, and that he suffered great pain for my sake.

I was sorry for his case, because he was a most gallant Gentleman, exceeding both in perfection of body and readines of wit, but yet my hart was so fixed on Periander, that although I had certainly known that he was dead, yet could I not have forgotten him to love any other. Yet howsoever I was affected, *Massicourt* found meanes to enter into the Orchard.

I

Adventures in Love.

I being there alone; and emboldned himself so far, that he came unto me, græted me, and with all humility, by word & mouth declared what torment he suffered for love of me, desiring me to be merciful unto him. Whereunto I answered, that I could shew him mercy in pittying his case, and exhorting him to change his mind, but other mercy I could not shew him, and so I flung into the Palace and left him among the trees, which might have been witnesss of the teares he shed. Yet he gave not over the field for all he had had but ill successe at the first assault, and purposed to send me a Letter, hoping that ink and paper would do more then his bare words had done. Especially because he being passionate, was not able in my presence to expresse his mind, neither would I hearken unto his speech. Insomuch that he thinking that I could not do lesse then read all whatsoever he wrote, though I could not give ear to his sayings; dispatched a Letter and conveyed it into my hands as secretly as he could: which letter was written to such an end.

Mallicourt to the Dutchesse Britil.

Pardon me gracious Lady, if I am troublesome unto your grace, for I am forced by that Lord whom I must obey. The sum of my desire is to please your grace, and my chiefest felicity consisteth in your content, therefore think not Lady that I would willingly molest you. My humble Petition is that it may please your grace to weigh the torment, grief and pain, which I suffer, which if your gracious mercy do not slacken, is like to seal my love with death, and to give the world cause to accuse your grace of cruelty. Mercy Madam is an ornament to Ladies of high estate. I wish not that you should forget the Prince *Periander*, but to admit me as co-partner and partaker of your grief. Neither do I crave that your grace should not love *Periander* (whether he be dead or yet live) but give me leave to love you, and to accept of my love, as a comfort to assuage the sorrow you suffer for *Periander*.

Farewell.

When

The Troublesome and Hard

When I had read this Letter I could not but be angry: for it grieved me that he went about to withdraw me from the love of Periander, though he seemed to wish the contrary. For how could I have loved him, and not forget Periander? how could I have been merry with him, and mourn for Periander? and how could I laugh with him, and weep for Periander: wherefore incontinently I wrote him this answer.

Brissilla to Sir Massicourt.

YOur conscience urged you (Sir Massicourt) to crave pardon in the beginning of your letter, foreknowing your offence. But your excuse is, for that you are constrained by him whom you must obey. *Cupid* you mean, I am sure: but how shamefull it is that a Knight should so bewray his pusillanimity and faintnesse of courage, I leave to your own consideration. And to let you understand furthermore, that if your desire be to please me, and therefore far from undertaking any thing that may trouble me, you shall obtain your wish and enjoy true felicity (which you affirm to consist in my content) if you molest me with neither letter nor speech, to love you. For in so doing you shall bind me to acknowledge that you have done me a singular pleasure. You know that I have already told you that I am sorry for your torment and passion; though I may not be your Physitian. Neither do I think the world so mad, as to judge me cruell if your folly cause you to die. (Though it be a common and usual custom unto all your sex, to talk of the mate before you have the check.) You can teach me that mercy becometh maids, but you forget in the meantime, that Knights ought not to be unmerciful as to seek the overthrow of our honesty, and to spoil us of our honour. Have not I given faith to love *Periander*, and shal I not incur foul shame and dishonor, if contrary to my promise, I love you? but would you have me use your love as a pastime to forget the dolor which otherwise I should suffer for the absence of *Periander*. How far do you run beyond reason; for I will have you know that such love as you talk of; yea the very memory thereof onely, should be a whetstone to sharpen my grief, seeing there is nothing
more

Adventures in Love.

more painful or odious unto me, than that which draweth my mind from thinking on *Periander*, and encumbereth my thoughts with matters taking away the remembrance of *Periander*, thinking no time il spent but that wherein I shed not tears for *Periander*. Therefore cease to molest me, seeing the sum of your delight consisteth in pleasing me.

After *Massicourt* had received this Letter, he durst not so often molest me. Nevertheless, of purpose he came divers times to the Court, preasing near the pryvy chamber to have occasion to speak with me; but I could watch him as well to shun him, as he could watch me to talk with me. In so much, that Once I wrote him this Letter, I spake with him but once, at which time I so sharply rebuked his importunity (seeing that no mild or courteous speeches could serue) that a long time he absented himself from the Court. At length (when I thought surely that I had been altogether rid of such a troublesome sutor) on the sudden he greeted me upon a certain morning, being but newly risen. And although I was alone, yet I was so angry, that I turned my face from him, and would not speak unto him. This happened (to my remembrance) twice or thrice, after which time I saw him no more. But about three weeks after, a little casket covered with a cloth of gold was brought me, whereon there was written this inscription in golden letters.

My Supreme will and pleasure is, that this be given
to *Duchesse Brisil*.

I marvelling what that meant, asked the messenger, who sent it? or to what end? To which he answered, that he that sent it, is not now, but living was called *Sir Massicourt*. Who being in his chamber (quoth the messenger) this morning, willed me to go into the next room till he called me, and that I should presently carry the casket which I should find upon the table to *Duchesse Brisil*; when I had stayed there three

The Troublesome and Hard

or four hours, I marvelled what my master did there so long alone, and peeping through the crease of the chamber door, I saw him lie breathless on the ground, and so amazed, I stepped in and found this casket, what is in it I know not, and so the messenger being Sir Massicourts chamberlain, departed. I opening the casket, found a dagger all bloudy, on the blade whereof, was this message ingraven in such small letters that I could scarce read it.

Go tell the Queen that in my heart inchron'd,
Doth sway the scepter of my haughty mind,
That thou hast pierc'd the seat whereon she sat,
And overcome the Kingdome which she rul'd;
That thou hast massacred that *Massicourt*,
Whereover she so proudly tyranniz'd:
That thou hast drowned all his thoughts in blood,
Who loved her as never wight was lov'd:
That thou hast rid him from her cruell face,
Who prais'd her beauty to the sovereign skies;
That thou hast sent him to the groves of hell,
That deem'd his heaven consisted in her grace:
That thou hast ended his exceeding pain,
Whose grief her mercy would not mitigate:
And that thou hast his torment finished,
Whom she (for cruel) caused to dispair,
This do, and let the colour of thy coat,
Give to the butcher of my death a note.

In what case I was (loving shepheards) after I had read that message, and been informed of that raskall tragedy, I will not now declare.

For the sorrow which I conceived for the end of *Massicourt*, was incredible. Besides what a suddain rumour was spread through the Court of his death you may consider, insomuch that I need not to stand upon that point. But I will passe on to the rest of my misery. For within three or four moneths after

Adventures in Love.

For the Decease of Sir Massicourt, I got a stronger enemy to my content then Massicourt; for the King himself (though he was above fifty years of age) solicited me to give over all remembrance of his son, and yeld to his request, which was to become his wife, and be crowned with the diadem of Albion. Yet could not that precious object alter my mind of Brissl, or any whit in her diminish the memory of Periander. But the King knowing that he might command, when he perceived that I could not be induced by prayers, fair words, lofty promises, and other allurements to grant his suite, soon used the tyrannous sentence of all those that may do what they will.

Sic volo, sic jubeo, stat pro ratione voluntas.

And thought to try whether he could by threatnings and menaces obtain that, which by fair means I would not consent unto: but all could not help, for except death onely nothing could take from me that faith and promise which I made to Periander. And whilest the King & I thus strove, he in loving, & I in hating a letter was brought to the Court from the King of Spain, wherein he informed the King that his son Periander was with him intending to be in Albion with his father and loving Brissl very shortly. But that he had sent a messenger before his coming, that they should be informed of his health and fortune, could scarce believe it; but that they saw it was manifest, seeing the Prince Periander had writters that Massicourt was by the Pylot Barfalis cast overboard, and yet notwithstanding he complained not of Barfalis, but agreed with him in the report of the tempest which was none. Besides that love which he bore me was sufficient proof of his treason. For he sent us the whole declaration of the treason practised by Barfalis against him. He also informed us how he had heard of the Queen his mothers death, whereof he was very sorry. The King having received these Letters, at the first was glad that his son was living, and caused Barfalis to be apprehended, who with a little racking confessed the

The Troublesome and Hard

whole matter, and appeached the Admirals son that was dead, as the Authoꝝ and cause of all that he had executed. Where, at the whole world so marvelled, that they could scarce beleve it. And whereas in my had pittied the Knights lamentable and tragical end, now they judged him rewarded according to his deserts. And I for my part, was so enraged against him, that if he had yet lived, I beleebe I had with my stone hands wꝛung his head from his shoulders; for he was the cause of all my calamities. The King caused Barfalis to be hanged and quartered, and in the place where Malsicourt that politick traytoꝝ was buried, did he command a gibbet to be set up reaching oꝛer his Tombe, and this wꝛitten on the top of it in great letters.

Here lieth entomb'd a Knight of ancient fame,
An Earls son, Sir *Malsicourt* by name.
This Knight, for love, an heinous treason tri'd;
Yet could not help, he pierc'd his heart and di'd.
He was no traitor known till clad in clay;
This Gibbet here was set it to bewray.

For the King was terribly enraged when he had heard this strange kind of treason: which was the cause that now he loved her whom he had wedded to his son; and hated him whom he was by Nature bound to love.

For lest *Periander* should return into Albion, and marry with one, whom he would have to be his wife, the King forgetting both the law of Nature and Honesty, wrote unto the King of Spain, that his Son *Periander* was guilty of treason against his own person, being his Father: and therefore desired him upon all friendship, and the alliance that had a long time been between the Kingdomes of Spain and Albion, to keep his son close prisoner, and to let him be used as hardly as any of all the other Captives which were in his Kingdome or Dominions.

When I had heard what answer the King had returned by
the

Adventures in Love.

the Embassadors of Spain, my heart was ready to burst. And I was minded divers times to dispatch my self with one of my garters, thinking that by my death I should deliver Perian-der from imprisonment, and move the Kings mind to use his son as he ought to do. But I know not how, I was al-ways so fallſly allured with hope, that I continually abſtained from ſhortening my life, and thereby prolonged my miſery. You ſhall therefore underſtand, that I got one of the Embas-ſadors Pages to carry a Letter from me unto Perian-der, and to deliver it ſecretly into his own hands; which the youth pro-miſed that he would accompliſh, though it ſhould coſt him his life: and to reward his readineſſe, and to make him the wil-linger and carefuller to diſcharge his duty, I gave him twen-tie crowns to drink. The Letter was written to this effect.

Brifilla to the Prince Perian-der.

Sweet *Perian-der*, the joy which poor *Brifil* conceived when ſhe heard of her *Perian-der*, was too great to be of long continu-ance, and even as the herb that groweth and fadeth in one hour, ſo the mirth that poſſeſſed my ſoul, was in a moment expelled and baniſhed. You accuſed the Pylot *Barſalis*, but you might rather have curſed the traytor *Maſſicourt* as the chief cauſe and firſt be-ginning of all our ſorrows: for the furious love, hypocritical friend-ſhip, and malicious policie of that unhappie Knight, hath wrought firſt his own ruine, and therewith our adverſitie. How miſerable and unhappy art thou *Perian-der*, that thy own natural father ha-teth thee? How unfortunate, that thy parent conſpireth againſt thee? And how unluckie, that he who ought to be thy chief friend is become thy enemy? Nay rather, how wretched is diſtreſſed *Brifil*, that unhappie *Perian-der* muſt be thus miſerable, unfortu-nate and unluckie for her ſake? Ah *Perian-der*, could my captivi-ty ſet thee at liberty, how pleaſantly, and how willingly ſhould the world ſee me run to the Priſon, and yeeld my leg to the Stocks or Iron Gyves? Nay, might the deareſt bloud that ſuccoureth my faithful heart, purchaſe thy ranſome from imprisonment, and ob-

The Troublesome and Hard

tain thee thy soules desire, how soon should my breast offer it self to my knife to be set a broach, and to have a passage made into the inmost part thereof? But no, the Gods, and fortune envy at me too greatly, to suffer me to enjoy so great happinesse. If no man can or dare tel you the cause of your fathers suddain wrath against you, know that I have found means to rid you of that doubt, and to let you understand that accursed *Brisil* is the occasion thereof, though she had rather die then live to see thee wronged. The King thy father will be married to *Brisil*, and therefore must *Periander* be banished, (which is more) imprisoned among strangers far from home. But assure thy self *Periander* that I will rather die, then undo that which is knitted with my faith, and bound with my honor. If you can patiently endure your imprisonment, perswade yourself that I will courageously abide my martyrdom. Which for that as it cannot but be the crown of mine honour, so also is like to be the cause of my releasement: I wish that it may happen with all speed. That *Brisil* being lifeless and forgotten, *Periander* may be reconciled to his father, return to his country and enjoy his pleasure untill the decease of the King, then to be crowned with the glorious title of King of *Albion*. And thus faithfull *Brisil* biddeth thee farewell, lamenting nothing so much as that she was not in the galley by you to row for you, and bear all the travel that you by reason of her were constrained to suffer, among them unnaturall Moors and galley slaves. Adieu.

Thine, and therefore thy self miserable,

Brisilla.

This Letter I had no sooner delivered to the Page, but Embassadors departed from the Court having taken their leave of the King, and embarked themselves the next day after to return into Spain. When they were gone the King sent for me, and asked me whether I was not yet resolved to love him seeing he hated his own son for love of me. Whereunto I answered that if his Majesty loved me indeed, he would likewise love his son, seeing that I loved none but his son, nor could not love any other as long as I lived. But (to be short,

Adventures in Love.

thout, and as little tedious loving shepheards, as I possibly may) after we had reasoned and argued together the space of a full hour, he in protesting how intirely he loved me, and that he could not live, unless he enjoyed Brissil as his Queen; and I in defending, that I might not love him, nor live, if I break my promise made to his son in his presence and by his consent; at length he burst out into these raging words. Proud Brissil, and ungrateful Duches, thou despisest the high offers of a King, and contemnest the love of a Monarch, that governeth a whole Kingdome. And thinkest thou not that I cannot command thee, seeing an huge people is ruled by me? I promise thee, that I will teach thee not to say nay when I demand; and to be ready to grant when I request. Therefore know that thou shalt be married unto me, wilt thou, or wilt thou not, and the Marriage day shall be the ninth day after to morrow. See then that thou prepare thy self against that day, to condescend to my pleasure, lest thou wilt rue thy Stubbozn hardneckedness. And with that he turned from me into the next chamber, and left me poor distressed wight ready to yield up the ghost at the sound of his conclusion. But snatching hope by the subject, I thought either the Kings minde might before the appointed day be altered, or fit opportunity offered me to escape his tyranny by flight. But neither I could in time get away, nor the King had forgotten his intent. But the day which he had appointed for the Wedding being come, and all things in a readinesse, sent for me. I, although I did not well know what to do yet resting upon this point, rather to die then to forsake Periander, and considering that fury was not to be repelled by force, where Majesty commanded, and that fair speeches prebail most, where the party is weakest, I went presently unto him, and falling on my knees, beseeched his Majesty to pardon me for my former folly, promising that whereas I had offended his Majestie with Stubboznnesse, I meant to make him amends with obedience and loyalty. And for that I could not but as yet mourne for my forepassed frenzie, I besought his Majesty to

The Troublesome and Hard

protract the day of the wedding one moneth farther, to the end that I might prepare and exorn my self in such manner, that the whole world may bear witness that *Brissil* doth offer her self a worthy spouse to so mighty a Bridegroom. The King was herewith so pleased, that giving the farewell to all anger, willingly granted me my request; whereof I was not a little rejoiced, hoping before the space of one moneth to be so far from his reach, that he should not force me to be married to any but to *Periander*.

CHAP. XVI.

How *Brissila* to avoid the intended Marriage of the King with her, departed secretly into *Spain*, where she found meanes to speak with the Prince *Periander*, and how he escaped out of prison with her.



D compass the conclusions of my intent, lest I should seem pensive or sorrowful, I wept all night, to the end mine eyes might spare from shedding tears in the day. Besides, I seemed to be very busie in beautifying my person with sumptuous clothes, costly jewels, precious pearls, and other ornaments which I had laid aside since the losse of *Periander*. At last, about a week before the prefixed time of our marriage, I espied an occasion to get out of the Court, which though it was not so fit as I could wish, yet fearing lest if I did let that slip, I should not have the like offered the day being so neer at hand, I took hold of it, which was this. There was a ship that six weeks before, had brought sugar, figs, raisons, dates, oranges and lemons, to Albion, the Merchants whereof, having bought other wares to return into *Spain*, had made their provision to go to Sea. Which when I heard, (for I was in nothing so attentive as to learn of some Bark that was bound towards *Castile*) I changed my sex in outward sight, and in the form of a Ship-boy

Adventures in Love.

boy, I went to the Spanish Merchants, and beseeched them to take me into their service, for I was a poor fatherless child that had for the space of two years led a Mariners life; which mistaked me so, (for that I was weak of constitution, and my limbs tender by nature) that I have taken leave of the Master of the Ship, wherein I have served to see if I could happen into some other kind of good service. The Merchants no doubting my tale to be other then truth, because I spake Spanish unto them, supposing that I had learned their speech by travelling into their Country, liked me so well, that they went to Rumbchance which of them should be my Master. Whereof I was so glad, that seeing the Mariners hoyle up the sailes, and hale in the Anchors cable. I cared not for the chance of the Die, or whose servant I should be, hoping that if the Gods would favor us with a gale of wind that I should shortly arrive to the place where the stay of my life, and hold of my hope remained. But mark the taunting check which Fortune gave me. For we had scarce entered the mouth of the Sea, but we were overtaken by two swift Pinnaces, so well furnished with all warlike provision, that they had been able to master four such Barks as the Merchants ship wherein we were. To be short, that they calling to our Pilot that he should strike, durst not but obey; and I misdoubting that they were Albion ships, sent to look after me, kept my self under the ship hatches, where I so bepitched and betarred my face, that the judgement of the eye could not prevail to discern who I was, if I might have escaped speaking. But the Pilot who could not understand the Albion speech, called me to interpret what the Albion Pilot demanded of him. But I made as if I had been so affraid that I could not speak, and while I heard them wangling each in his own language, one nothing understanding the other, I tried to counterfeit my voyce as well as I could, fearing lest I should have been compelled at length to become their interpreter, which in truth so happened. For the Merchant my Master considering the course of our Navigation, was greatly hindered by their

The Troublesome and Hard

inportunity, and fearing lest they were Pirates and thought to pilfer and rob the Bark, and spoile him and the other Merchants of their goods and libes, forced me to come to the upper part of the ship, and to speak to my Country-men. Thus I constrained whether I would or no, not onely to present my self unto them that sought me (for I had heard what they demanded, though none could understand them but my self, and therefore I was the better instructed what to say unto them, and how I should interpret their sayings unto the Spaniards) but also to betray my voyce unto them, and to bee the expounder that should declare and explicate what they demanded, and what the Spaniards answered. Wherefore being come into their presence, I began to speak British, but that in such order that they had much ado to understand me, and took more pleasure to laugh at me, then to enquire after Brisl, whom the fools spake with, and thought that she had been some Moor or Turk. For the Admiral who was there in his own proper person, hearing how crabbedly I cracked his British language on the pate; what the devill (quoth he) have the Gods sent us hither, to mock us with our language after this sort. No doubt but our paines are well bestowed to come thus far into the Sea, to talk with such an eloquent fellow. I beleeve certainly, that he hath been an Orator to the Devil three or four years. Whereupon he asked me what Countrey man I was, a Turk or a Jew: I answered him that I was which he would, for I knew not my self where I was born. At length he asked me where I had learned to speak such good British, whereunto I made as if I had not marked that he mocked and gybed with me, said, that when I was two or three years old I was in Albion with my mother, for the space of two or three years or thereabout, in which time I learned so much of their language, that God be thanked it serveth my turn. Whereat they all burst forth, and laughed very heartily, and at length, remembering Brisl, they asked me whether our Bark was bound: and I answered to Barbary; then they asked whether we had not any women

Adventures in Love.

men passengers aboard, I answered, that we had no more then they saw, either men or women. They said they were not so content, but would search the Ship, and bade me to tell the Pilot that he should not resist their pleasure, for they would do it and were forced to do it by the straight command of their King. Whereupon I told our Pilot this tale, that they were the King of Albions searchers, that scoured up and down the Seas, to see if they could meet with any Ship that carried such wares out of the countrey as were not granted or licenced by the king; and that because they suspected that the Merchants that were in that Ship had unpiviledged wares, they would for that purpose make search for them, and if they found none, they would not any longer hinder them of their undertaken voyage. The Pilot willingly let them come aboard the Bark, though the Merchants thought verily that they had been Pyrates, and used that colour to obtaine their prey the easier. But they found themselves deceived, for after the Albion Lords had thoroughly searched the Ship, they returned into their Pinace again, without offering the least injury in the world to the Spaniards, whereof they were glad, and I gladder, having escaped the danger which Fortune seemed to threaten me. And in few dayes after, being speedily arrived at the wished Haven, my Master took post horse for himself and me, and we rode to Sivil, in which City my Periander lay imprisoned. And now I began to wish my self released from the subjection of my Master, for he employed me in so many matters that I could not perform my duty towards him accordingly, and withall have time and occasion to obtain my desire concerning Periander; wherefore I sought all means possible to be rid of my Master, who was loth to part from me. At length I feined my self to be sick, that I could neither eat nor drink, nor stand on my feet, but kept my bed, and being asked by him what I ailed, or what sickness I had, I made as if I durst not tell him, at length seeing he was so importunate to know, I told him it was the plague, whereof he was so affraid, that he would put me into an Hos-

The Troublesome and Hard

pital among the diseased; but I intreated him that he would rather leaue me to mine own shift, then to place me among the diseased, promising that if I escaped death, I would re-
turne into his serbice befoze any other. And though he was loth to let me go where I should want looking unto, yet see-
ing that I had rather haue died then be carried to an Hospi-
tal, he gave me thre or four pieces of gold and sent me pack-
ing, wishing that I might fare well. I thanked him for his
kindness, and the Gods for my liberty. And now I began
marvellously to long for the sight of my onely comfort Peri-
ander, who little knew that I was so neer him. But I could
scarce imagine how I might come to him, and aboid all sus-
pition. For I feared lest the King should haue misdoubted
of my intent, and therefore haue written unto the King of
Spain to make search whether I were in his countrey, but
especially to watch whether any came unto Periander, knowing
that if I were in Spain it was to come to him. The conside-
ration whereof, made me so carefull and so wary that I look-
ed befoze I leaped, and did nothing but being fozethought;
So that I passed by the prison where Periander lay every day
once or twice, and sometimes more often, to see what likeli-
hood there was that I might come neer him. I espied the
manner of the prison, the condition of the Gaolers, the estate
of those that frequented his company. At length I became so
impatient, that I could not abide any longer delay and there-
foze began to inuent some deceit or other to beguile the keep-
ers, and come to the speech of Periander. First I purposed to
apparel my self like some Italian Gentleman, and so to haue
asked the Gaolers leaue to speak unto the Albion Prince, but
that seemed not the safest way. Afterwards, I thought to go
like a Brittain beggar; thinking that they would haue brought
me to talk with the Brittain Prince, to take pleasure at our
strange parley. And this liked me worse, for so I might haue
easily been entrapped. At last I found no better meanes
then to counterfeit my self to be an Egyptian Prophet and
Fortune-teller. So that I went into the street where the
prison

Adventures in Love.

prison stood, and a good way off (as I had not thought to come near the prison) I began to sing an Egyptian enchantment, and I did so counterfet the tune thereof (though I knew not my self what sence my Sonnet inferred) that the Spaniards thought me an upright Egyptian; and having ended my Song, a number of Youths, Maids, women and men, also came flocking about me, holding up their hands to know their fortune. I, as cunningly as I could, held the devill a candle, and told them many good morrowes, and evil evenings, as I often have heard of the Egyptian figure Castres used to do, to deceive the world; yet nevertheless I used the matter so that they were content of their fortune, and liked me the better. But I was so haled and pulled from one place to another, that I knew not how I might content them all. At length I was fetched by the Maids that dwelt with the Gaoloz and his daughters to come thither, whither I went willingly, for that was my cause of my practised sorcery, and there was the man whose fortune made me become a fortune-teller. To be short, the Maids of the house led me into a yard where they might secretly talk with me, and ask me questions concerning their fortunes. But it chanced that my good hap was such, that I espied Periander out of a window reaching unto the yard where we were; but alack I spied that renowned mirrour of beauty, fair Florina, the daughter of the King of Spain, standing by him, who entangled in the snare of fancy, and fettered in the pleasant contemplation of Perianders beauty so loved him that she corrupted the Gaoloz with sums of money to use her Love, not as a strange prisoner, but rather as a worthy guest whom she also in proper person sometimes visited to assuage his sorrow; which sight so amazed me that I could not tel what I said to the Maids desirous to know their fortune. I felt a kind of soothing pleasure creep into the veins of my heart, for the presence of my friend, & on the other side, a fearful kind of grief possessed my soul, for that I was acquainted with his company, mistrusting whether poor Brasil was committed to the winds, & rased out of the heart of Periander,

The Troublesome and Hard

Periander, by the matchless curtesies which he received of faire Florina; but not suspend you with my long and endlesse discourse (loving shepheards) know that faire Florina espying what dealings I had with the Mayloz daughter, as new sick as the rest, willed the Mayloz to bring me into the chamber where she was with Periander, to learn what cunning I had. Therefore I being led by the Mayloz before her, saluted her and her company with all the humility I could, but yet in such order that my bewinged cheeks were died with a vermillion red at the sight of Periander. But Florina imputing the change of my hue to shamefastnesse, and thinking I being a simple swad, was abashed to see my self in their presence bid me come neer her boldly, saying she meant to be my patient, & to see whether I knew by the lineaments of her hand, what Fortune she had, and was like to have. Imagine (gentle shepheards) what mind I had either to tell her fortune, or to give her an answer being in that case; yet taking all the courage that in such extremity could cleave to my heart, I said, My skill is too small, to conjecture of so high constellations; for I hold opinion that the destinies of those that are of such noble descent as your self, are more intricate then the constellation of base persons; and therefore if my divinations prove false or little agreeing to the truth, I leave your Grace to be burdened with the blame, seeing it is your pleasure that I should conjecture of your luck, and not my own presumption: And therefore thus much I wil say of your fortune, I wil not touch your Parentage, wealth, honoz, and likelihood of great renown, for that is known to all the world, but I wil tel you of that which is most doubtful, and more delightful unto you, as my simple knowledge teacheth me; for (unless I am deceived) you love (Lady) and that most loyally, but I see one doubt which is like to redound to your sorrow, that you shall have a shrewd enemy to your desire, and a terrible foe to your wished love. And to yield you reason of my divination, mark the line of affection in your hand, it is streight, a token of pure love, and faithful affection accompanied with loyalty,
and

Adventures in Love.

and these two short wrinkles which you see of each side of the
foresaid line, are token of the cross you are like to indure in
obtaining you hearts ease. Neither would I have your grace
to think that the cause of this ill success dependeth onely on
the person who hath your heart in hold; for there be many
events and chances that we cannot foresee or forethink,
which may breed your sorrow. But hoping that your Grace is
minded as the Astrologian that said, *Inclinationes non sunt
edicta pratorum*, that inclinations be not ordinances and de-
crees of Pratores; shall be able to command the stars and rule
over them, according to that old saying, *Sapiens hominabiter
astris*, I am glad thou takest me to be so wise Egyptian, re-
plied Florina. But I pray thee canst thou not tell me more
particularly of some adventure to come? So truly Madam
(quoth I) may it please your Grace to bear with my rudeness
and ignorance, which is not able to content your pleasure, and
satisfie your mind concerning this point. Why then, quoth
he, let me know what you can say to this Gentleman, for I
hope as I admitted him to hear my luck so he will not be an-
gry if I hear his fortune. But Periander, (as I well percei-
ved) knew me; for I saw his face receive such divers colozs,
and his countenance altered so suddenly, that Florina marvel-
led what had befallen unto him, that he stood so perplexed;
for he conceived infinite pleasure in seeing his onely joy so
nearer him, and contrarily he was grieved that I found him
with Florina, fearing lest I should suspect him less constant,
and so my self less faithful. Florina beholding Periander, wist
not what to say, and although I was sorry to see him in that
taking, yet because I knew the occasion and reason thereof, I
was the better contented, hoping that it was no more then I
thought it to be, and that he was led in a trance by my unex-
pected presence. Yet I was commanded by Florina to depart,
she thinking it now no time to tell any more fortunes. And
so I was forced to leave poor Periander, before he was come to
himself, although I feared that as my presence had stricken
him, so my departure would kill him. Nevertheless, seeing
there

The Troublesome and Hard

there was no remedy, I took it as patiently as I could, and away I went though I was not permitted to go far; for the Maids of the house so stung about me, and kept such ado with me to know the sequel of their fortunes, and to have me fully resolve them in all points which they desired to know, (seeing I was so hastily called from them by Florina, that I had not half satisfied them before) that I could scarce get from them. And my luck was such, that while I was busie with answering to their questions, the Gaoloz had heard that Florina was missed in the Court, and looked for, to come to the Queen her mother, which when he had signified unto her, she stayed not, but incontinently hied to the Court. Perander therefore by this time being restored to his wits, and seeing both time and place serve to talk with me in secret, to the end that I should not be discried, willed the Gaoloz to bid me to come unto him, for that he earnestly desired to confer with me about the nature of certain hearbs that grow in Egypt and other peculiar matters. To be short, the Gaoloz sent me in to Perander, and there left me with him alone, where he came and embraced me, his eyes distilling and gushing forth whole streames of teares, saying, Brisi! Brisi! pardon mee, that you were not by mee welcommed and entertained at your arrivall, according to your deserts, and my duty. For where necessity nippeth, all must obey. And doubt not that Leander had bene more welcome to loving Ero, if the swelling waves had not hindered his journey by glutting themselves with his carcase, and so stayed him from the wished Tower, unto which he was swimming, then thou most worthy Brisi to thy faithfull Perander. It were too long for me (worthy Shepheards) to declare what other cherishments and loving congratulations that hee made. To be short, we talked of many matters (as you may well think,) of Sir Masticourts Conspiration and treason especially, which was the first step to all our troubles; of the Quænes death; of the Kings unnaturall tyranny, of my secret flight, of our Fortune on the Sea, of my Father:

Adventures in Love.

to be short, there was nothing raked up in silence, that concerned our fortune. At length, the chiefest matter and hardest point of all our conference was offered, when as we having informed each other of all our adventures since that time that we were by the policy of traiterous Mafficourt separated entred into consultation what we might do to shun the eminent danger which was like to fall upon us, by reason of the Kings wrathfulnesse. And after we had long deliberated, now intending to use this means, now that at length, we concluded to take the vantage of the time, seeing that by means of Florina. Periander was not kept so straightly, but that he might go secretly out of the prison and walk whither he would to take the air. Therefore least if his father the King of Albion should upon my flight send new Embassadors to the King of Spain, to have his son put to death (for he divers times swore unto me that Periander should die if he any way hindered his marriage with me,) or brought Albion to be dealt with, all not according to fatherly affection, but his mercilless rage, we thought best not to expect the worst, but to play safe as long as time and occasion was offered us. To make few words Periander the next morning by break of day got out of the prison (telling the Jailor that he went to a place where Florina had appointed him to meet her) and coming to the house where I waited for him, he presently departed from Sivil, intending to travel towards some solitary place, where we might live untill we heard of the death of the King of Albion. And because we should not be known if search were made after us, we cloathed our selves both alike in the habite of country maids, as if we had been two sisters.

The Troublesome and Hard

CHAP. XVII.

How the Prince *Periander* and *Brisilla* became shepherds, and how by the means of *Malorena* and *Bergama*, the Prince departed from *Brisill*.



A length travelling thus together, we arrived to a certain village which is called Ezla, where we purposed to keep our residence. And although we had sufficient wherewith to maintain our selves, yet the better to avoid suspicion, and to have wherein to imploy our leisure and to take our delight, and pastimes, we bought a flock of sheep, and learned to play the shepherds as well as we could; none of al the inhabitants knowing but that we were two sisters. For *Periander* was yet but young and had no beard, and besides he was so fair of complexion, that it had been impossible for one to suspect that he was no woman.

After we had passed over one moneth in that haven of content and passing pleasant kind of life, I enjoying the presence of my *Periander*, and he of his *Brisill* in spite of the world, for *Amo* began to envy at our felicity, and to chert the happy estate wherein we lived. For it chanced that we being both at the feast which was celebrated in honour of the Goddess *Ceres*, there was a young shepherd bring son unto one of the richest farmers in our village, who casting his eyes on *Sybilla*, (for so I named *Periander*, who was thought to be my sister) was fettered in the snare of his beauty that we were so troubled with importunate requests and lutes of this youth, that we wist not how to dehoyt him from folly, or how to quench the burning flames which consumed the poore shepherds hearts. For the crueller *Sybilla* my supposed sister seemed to be, the more he was provoked to hope for mercy; the colder she shewed her self to be, the hotter he was, the more she disdained, the more earnest he sued; the more she crossed him for his fondness, the more he hoped for kindnesse.

Adventures in Love.

Insomuch that poor Petulca (for so was that wretched shepheard called) so miserably loved, that all the Countrey knew by his colour, what Captain he honoured and served. His joy and welfare which was wont to recreate the whole company of the Inhabitants, was changed into Melancholy.

His young face which was a fashion of Modesty, Grace, Mirth, Beauty and Comeliness, waxed wrinkled, his limbes weakened, and all his body decayed: So that as he was generally pittied of all men, so were we most wofully grieved at his hard Fortune, though we could not help or remedy the same.

Nevertheless, seeing that Petulca ceased not from his suit, but so hotly followed his cause, pleading for mercy to save his life, I counselled Periander to feign as if he loved him, hoping that we might by that devise and means escape the ill will and anger which we were like to gain of all our Neighbours if the youth had died. For his passion was such that nothing but death only could move him to leave his love. Thus Petulca loving a young Prince in the habit of a lovely shepheard, and perceiving that he had won the Fort which he had so forcibly assaulted, revived again, and in short time became as pert & as trim as ever he had been. He came twice or thrice in the week unto us, and so pleasantly discoursed of divers matters as occasion offered, that we could not have changed the recreation which he had by his honest company and merry conversation, for the richest jewell of India. As he had lived in this contented and pleasant manner one month, it happened that the daughter of a shepheard called Petrucco, dwelling in the next Farm to our cotage, was so intricated in the net of affection, and so intangled in the beauty of Petulca, that she allured him by continuall favours, loving glaunces, courteous greetings, pleasant speeches, and all means she could invent to gain his good will, and to move him to love her; but all the world was not able to alter his minde, though we wished that he might have been inticed by her deserts, to repent

The Troublesome and Hard

of his first bargain. At length when Malorena (so was this unhappy Shepheard named) espied y^e Petulca was so ungratefull that he would not any way requite her curtesies with favour, she began most deadly to hate my sister (I mean Perian-der) supposing her to be the cause of all her wo: For as she knew Petulca was in love of my said sister, so she thought that he was as well liked of her; which induced her to be perswaded that we of purpose entertained him the more kindly to hinder her matter: whereas contrarily when we knew that she so dearly affectioned him we made less account of him, hoping that he wearied with our coyneesse, might have lent his eare to his new Mistresse that honoured him so highly. Yet howsoever we wisht her well, and longed that she might enjoy her hearts desire, she nevertheless being of contrary opinion, became our mortall foe. If she chanced to passe by us, she did cast such a lowering look upon us, as if she would have eaten us: if she had lighted at unawares in the company where we were, she thought her self the worse; if she spake of us to others, she belyed us, and invented tales to defame and discredit us. Yet all this served not; but intending fully to revenge her self of the injury which she dreamed that we offered her, she excogitated this stratagem. There was in the same Village a beautiful young Maid, Niece to this Malorena, who by reason that she kept her sheep in the next pasture to ours, kept great company with us, and became very familiar and friendly unto us. Which her Niece Malorena espying, thought to use her as the instrument of her supposed practises. Therefore on a certain morning she sent for her & made such a sugred speech unto her, declaring the occasion why she sent for her, the estate of her love towards Petulca, the love of Petulca towards Sybilla, alias Periander, and briefly all that concerned this matter, desiring her not to deny her friendly aide and help herein. So that to be short, Bergama (for that was this other Shepheards name) promised her niece that what she could do, she would be ready to performe. Whereupon she told her what she would have her to do, instructing her in all points concerning the same.

Adventures in Love.

same. Which tended to no other end then to work our love, and by expelling us by their treachery out of those quarters, to enjoy the love of Petulca. Insomuch that these two Peeres having agreed and concluded upon the premises, thus began Bergama to play her part. But you must note, that when Petulca the amorous shepheard used to come to our field, his way lay by the place where Bergama kept her sheep. So that she espying him, on a certain morning betimes marching over her ground to come to pass the time with us in merry chat according to his maner, she stepped unto him and knowing with what kind of talk she might stay his journey, she cunningly held him prattle until such time as she espied that I was alone. For commonly my sister Sybil *alias* Periander, towards noone used to go to our lodging, not so well able to suffer the heat of midday, as I. Bergama therefore espying me alone, called me unto her, and asked me where my sister was (as if she had not known it) when I had answered that she was gone home; why then (quoth she) seeing thou art alone, I pray keep company with me a little and this she heard, who although he had rather be in company with Sybil, yet for that managre his will, he must this noone be my guest, will not be displeased with your presence. Sith he loveth you the better for your sisters sake. With that she did lead us both into a delectable Arboz, whence I might see my sheep as well as if I had been in mine owne field, and therefore was the sooner intreated to stay with her. In the midst of this Arbour was a table of Marble Stone, on which she laid a fair napkin, and set befoze us such chear as was most wished for in the Countrey at that time of the year, praying us to sit downe and take such fare as she had in good part, sith she envited us not for the excellency of her delicacies, but for good will and pleasure of our company. So she placed the shepheard Petulca and me together on one side of the Table, and she herself sate on the other. While we were thus merrily banquetting and talking together, thinking or dreaming of no harme, Malorena by whose counsaile and instind all this was practised,

The Troublesome and Hard

sed having notice of our being together, by means of a little wench sent under by Bergama her neece, in post-haste went to our Cottage and entring into the house spake unto Periander in this manner.

Fair Sybil, I doubt not but you have heard of the love and affection which I have borne towards the Shepheard Petulca, and that therefore I seemed to be displeased with you because he so dearly loved you, and for your sake despised and disdained me. But now, seeing I know the contrary, ~~and~~ being enforced of one of his speciall friends, how the matter standeth, I perceive that I have greater occasion to be angry with your sister then with you; and therefore I thought good to come unto you, and to crave pardon of you, for that I was offended with you without cause. In respect whereof for acquittance, I will now shew you as great friendship, as before I wished you evill. You shall therefore understand that your sister Brisilla doth most unnaturally deal with you in loving Petulca, whereas she seemeth not to esteem of him, and Petulca himselfe doth most shamefully abuse your courtesie, in that you give such trust and credit to his feined speeches and dissembling perswasions. For he therewith bringeth you in a foolles paradise, causing you to beleve that you are the saint whom he honoureth, whereas he like a treacherous caitiffe loveth your sister Brilil so affectionately, that he never espieth her out of your company, but he hieth unto his Lady, passing the time with passionate speeches, swearing each other love and loyalty, and therewith conspiring together how they may best deceive you and feed you with this false opinion that Petulca loveth you, because you should not perceive that he and your sister could play concord in your absence, though they were alwayes at discord in your presence. And for because you shall finde my words to be true, and acknowledge me to be your perfect friend, whom you suspected to be your foe (as in truth for a time I could not well digest you, I will lead you in a place where you shall see your unnaturall sister and dissembling sutor banquetting together. You know my neece
Bergama

Adventures in Love.

Bergama very well, I doubt not, which is as shrewd a wench as any in the world, if you knew her qualities. And I think also that you perceive what great acquaintance there is between her and your sister. This Bergama my cunning Niece hath granted them her house for their secret meeting place, where Petulca after he hath been with you, and sometimes without comming unto you, stayeth till he come home, and then is sure to enjoy the company of his loving Brisk. For as soon as you are gone from her, thither she trippeth. And if you will follow my counsaile and go with me, you shall see how lovingly she at this present sitteth on Petulca's side, and maketh good chear with him in Bergama's Arboz. I would have you to go with me, because if we go to your field, we are like to misse of our purpose, the reason is, for that my shrewd Niece Bergamas standeth on her hold, and watcheth for your comming, and as soon as she can espy you, the convert breaketh up, the Shepheard marcheth on forward, and your sister returneth to her sheep. But where I will lead you, we shall not be seen, and yet see all. And then take Malorena to be your friend, when your owne eyes shall force you to confesse the same.

Periander giving faith to this Syrens Sweet Song, went with her, and according to her saying, saw us together, though we poor souls most innocent, and thought of no such supposed villany. Yet Fortune to marre our matter the more, and to give the greater colour to Malorena's tale, would have it so, that while Periander stood with that traitress and looked upon us, the shepheard Petulca being of custom merry and pleasant, smacked his lips on my cheek as I sat by him, which I knowing his humour, that he did it of wantonness, and not of love, made not strange of it, & seemed not to take it in ill part, with the shepheard meant no evil by it: But alas! (loving shepherds) Periander took it so heavily, and so ingraved both that which he had heard of Malorena, and seen with his own eyes, in the ground of his tender heart; that now I am compelled to detest that traitress Malorena, to hate that deceitful Pergama

and

The Troublesome and Hard

and to curse Fortune yet at this hour. For when Periander had seen us in the Arboz, he returned home presently, and thanking Malorena, that she had so faithfully bewrayed our treachery unto him, desired her to return home with him, where he wrote a Letter unto me, and sealing it up gave it to Malorena, and not doubting of her fidelity, prayed her to deliver it unto me; which he promised to do, and departed from Periander, who incontinently went his way I know not whither; for since that time that he went home and I was called by Bergama, I never saw him, nor heard of him, nor could know what is become of him. The traitress seeing how cunningly she had deluded her neighbour, untipped the scales of the Letter, thinking she might be her secretary, seeing she had done her so good a turn; but by chance looking on the subscription before she had read the contents, and seeing Periander written instead of Sybilla, was stricken in a maze on the sudden, not knowing what it meant, but to be the better enforced, she read the Letter which was thus penned.

To Brissil, health and pleasure.

Brisil, to the end that thou maist enjoy thy *Peinlea* at thy will and pleasure without any hindrance, I have left thee, and my self meanes to live solitary in some wilderness, seeing the society wherein I onely delighted, is taken from me. Love *Peinlea*, and love him so, that thou hate me if thou wilt; for I cannot but love thee, and so love thee, that for fear lest I be troublesome unto thee, I have separated my self from thee, wishing thee all the pleasure and delight thou canst desire, and praying the Gods to save *Peinlea* from all mischance for thy sake. Farewell.

Ever thine, though thou

weary to be his,

PERIANDER.

~~When~~

Adventures in Love.

When Malorena had read that Letter, she could not but marvel at the strangeness of the case; for she perceived there by what kind of sisters we were; and though she was sorry that she had offered such true Lovers that injury, yet glad for that she hoped to enjoy the love of Petulca, she stayed till he came home, and then she shewed him Perianders Letter, telling him from point to point how she had served us: For she thought, when Petulca should know how he was by us deceived in that he loved a man for a woman, a youth for a maid, yea Periander for Sybilla, that then he would be sorry that he so unwisely had disdained her self, and set so little by her love. But yet she was deceived; for Petulca having attentively listened to her tale, and well perpended the Letter, was so angry at her and enraged that she had committed such villany against us, that he swore he would himself revenge the injury by her offered to us. And therewith flung from her, and presently declared all the matter unto me with tears trickling down his eyes, and shewed me the Letter which Periander had written unto me: whereat I was both so ashamed and amazed, that I fell in a swoond. But being by the industry of Petulca come to my self again, I conceived that grief for the departure of Periander, and the false opinion which he holdeth of me, which now so tormenteth and bereth me, that I wish I had fared as wicked Malorena did, who understanding that Petulca had opened all her treachery and devilish practises unto me, falling into desperation, for that she had attempted so much villany in vain, cast her self into the River, and so was drowned. By means whereof the whole village, yea and the neighbour towns, were filled with the rumour of this tragedy; and I the next morning making no man of my counsel, departed from thence, to seek my sorrowfull Periander.

Thus (loving shepherds) have you heard the discourse of my miserable life, which now is so much the more miserable, by how much the more pleasure and joy I have had therein: For the grief which I suffer because Periander (the thought of whom, and remembrance of whose love is the onely thing

The Troublesome and Hard

wherby I live) departed from me with such an opinion, is so extreme, that the greatest pleasure which ever I enjoyed in all my life, is no way equivalent or comparable unto it. Judge then your self. (worthy shepheards) whether I have not cause to curse Fortune, and blame even the Gods of cruelty.

Wherewith Brissila having ended her history, began newly to weep and lament most pittifully. But Ilmenio and Pererio, who had so attentively given eare to her discourse, that they had not interrupted any part thereof, comforted her as much as they might. And seeing that by this they were come to the place where Ilmenia had appointed to rest that night, they made provision for supper, as merrily as their passions would suffer them, falling to their meat, refreshed their weary bodies, and afterward took their rest.

As soon as Apollo had lighted on his fiery steeds to run his wonted course, Pererio, Ilmenia, and Brissil, rising from their bed, betook them to their journey towards the Temple of Diana, every one of them hoping that they should have their grief if not remedied, yet at least something mitigated; for the wisdom and divine power of the Lady president of that Temple, was so blazed by the Trump of Fame through all the Countries about her that no man in her time which had heard of her celestiall knowledge, doubted but that his evill might by that Lady be redressed, though it were nere so marvelous, so it passed not the bounds of possibility. This Lady was called Felicia, of whose wisdom, knowledge, beauty, excellency courtesie, gracious favour towards all true Lovers, and vertuous piety towards all distressed persons Monte Mayor largely describeth in his Diana; and soasmuch as the same Monte Mayor copiously setteth forth the sumptuousnesse and magnificence of the Palace wherein this Lady Felicia kept her Court in the fourth Book of the first part of his said Diana; I think it superfluous for me to retain the Readers eare with unnecessary relations of those things that by others have so exactly been performed.

Wherefore turning the gentle Reader desirous to know
the

Adventures in Love.

the curiosity of the sumptuous building both of the Temple and Pallace before mentioned, with the situation of the place to the fourth book of Monte Mayors Diana, I will prosecute the matter of my history.

CHAP. XV.

How *Perierio*, *Ismenia*, and *Brifil*, in their travell found *Marcelio* and *Maffeo* asleep, who departed with them towards the Temple of *Diana*.



Perierio with his company had not gone above the space of an hour or thereabout, they came into a fair green, where they saw a shepherd and a knight lying on the tender grasse asleep both together. *Ismenia* and the Lady *Brifil* marbelling at that sight. Seeing two persons of such different calling, so fellowlikely sleeping one by the other, wist not what it meant; for they saw neither flock of sheep by them, nor yet any other company. But *Perierio* told them that he knew both the shepherd and the knight also; for he had both seen them at his fathers house, and heard them declare their sorrows to his sisters. So while they lay and slept, *Perierio* declared unto *Ismenia* and the Lady, who they were, (for it was *Marcelio*, and *Maffeo*) and as briefly as he could rehearsed the sum of both their discourses which they made in his presence to his sister *Euphilia*, concerning the cause of their travell and trouble, when she so courteously with her sister *Perina*, entertained them at her fathers lodging. And when as he had told them as much as he knew of *Marcelio* and *Maffeo*, (which greatly delighted both *Ismenia* and the Lady *Brifil*, for they conceived infinite pleasure in hearing the strange history of their lives) he awaked them, both desirous to know what successe they had in their travel, and how they had so happily hit of one anothers company. *Maffeo* not sleeping so soundly as *Marcelio*, awaked at the first call, and marbelling to see such beautiful shepherds about him, thought that it was some ominous token of good hap; and as he beheld them more

The Troublesome and Hard

narrowly espying Perierio, he leaped up suddenly, and imbraced him so curteously, yeelding him a thousand Bezolas manys and thanks for his gentle entertainment at his fathers country house, that not Perierio himself onely, but Ilenia also, and the Lady Brissil could not but praise the Knight for his gratuity and thankfulness: and being asked of Perierio whether he had found his Eleonora, and where he had met with Marcello, he answered, that after he parted from him and his sisters, he found Marcello within two days after, exclaiming on fortune for her accursed inconstancy, & most bitterly lamenting the miserable estate he was in for his Alcida, who continually fled from him when she could hear of his arrival to the place where she was. Insomuch (quoth Masfeo) that when I heard Marcello (whom I til that time never had seen) so piteously breathe forth his complaints to the merciless skies I thought my self favoured of the Gods, that I was not onely tormented with the sting of adversity, seeing there were more that bewailed their adventures then my self. And in truth I so pitied Marcello his case, that I asswaged mine own grief by comforting him; when I found him so desolate, and void of all consolation and hope. So that he glad of my company, and I of his, after we had declared our troubles each to other, we purposed to travel together, and so have kept one the other company these five days. In which time we have coursed over most part of all the villages about the river Ezla, where old Camillo your father dwelleth. And as we were one evening something late in a pleasant grove, some 40 leagues from this place, we (overcome by the wearisomnesse of our journey, and heavinessse of our sorrows) fell asleep. Where being awaked by three most beautifull nymphs, of them received a letter subscribed unto us both: whereof we greatly marvelled, seeing that no man in the world knew of our amity and friendship, which was but of two or three days continuance. Nevertheless we hoped more then we feared. For we thought that such divine things could not happen but for our better luck & content. Wherefore unanimitly the letter we read it, & found these to be the contents,

Felicia

Adventures in Love.

*Felicia servant to the Goddesse Diana, to the valourous
Knights Marcello and Maffeo.*

MArvell not (most worthy Knights) that my Nymphs amidst the solitary groves, bring you a message from me: being unknown unto you. For seeing that I take pleasure in nothing so much as in succouring those that profess chastity and true love, when as by the uncertaint doom of the unchangeable Goddes Fortune, they be led into the irksome path of adversity, and pestered with sorrows for the unhappy and overthwart successe of their honest and worthy desires; when I was informed at the altar of Diana, of your deserts, and understood how worthily you have merited not onely to enjoy your wished love, but also to be crowned with a glorious lawrel in token of your loyalty, how could I do less then send my Nymphs unto you, praying as forlorn, and to set you in the path that shall bring you to the accomplishment of all your heroical desires; take the way that my messengers appoint you, and you shall have occasion to hope *Marcello* for his *Alcida*, and *Maffeo* for his faithfull *Eleonora*. Farewell,

When we had read this letter, not knowing whether we dreamed or were deceived with some phantasie or vain vision, we looked on the Nymphs, gazing on their beauty; but knew not what answer to make. But they so graciously spake unto us with such a settled and grave countenance, beautified with pleasantnesse and curtesie, saying. We not abashed at our presence worthy Knights; for we are sent hither not to harm you, but help you, to give you comfort, and incourage your minds now distressed. Marcello taking heart gave them this answer, Worthy Nymphs with we bee not able to make you any part of amends for this your high desert. I beseech the sacred powers of heaven to recompence your labour toward us. In the meantime if occasion were offered that our service might requite your courtesie, till death we acknowledge ourselves bound both unto you and the sovereign Lady Felicia,

The Troublesome and Hard

who hath sent you hither to direct our straying paces, and ad-
dresse us in some stayed path, by following of which we may
obtain the end of our haplesse journey.

Courteous knight (replied one of the Symphs) recompence
we neither deserbe nor desire, our message we bring and thus
deliver it. Seeing you have read the Letter, it may please
you to stay here till you see us no longer but so, that you mark
well what way we take, and then follow us at your pleasure,
and you shall not misse of the way which our Lady doth write
of. And therewith the Symphs most courteously taking
their leaves departed from us, though we were sorry to see
them goe, and leaue us behinde them. Yet we encouraged
by their words, followed, being led by the guide of hope, not
so much knowing whether we goe right, as hoping that
we are in in the way which the Lady promised that wee
should take.

Thus (Perierio,) you have heard what successe we have
had since I was with you.

When Perierio, Iimania, and the Lady Brisil, had heard the
words of Maffeo, marvelled at the strangeness thereof, and
told him, that unlesse they were deceived, they were in their
direct way to the Temple of Diana, whither they also trabel-
led to the same Felicia, to craue her ayde and counsaile for the
abridgement of their sorrowes. Maffeo passing glad of that,
waked Marcelio, who in like manner as his fellow had done,
knew and saluted Perierio. And after they had very courte-
ously greeted one another, and each discharged him of his du-
ty according to the rules of civility, they marchd on pnciuing
their journey. And for as much as Iimania and the Lady Bri-
sil had partly by Maffeo, while Marcelio in his shepheards weed
yet sleept, bene enformed of their fortunes, they re-
quested Perierio, Iimania, and the Lady Brisil, each of them
to tell the cause of their travell. Which to beguile the wea-
risome journey, and to pleasure the knights, they did all
three performe.

When they had ended each his discourse, they came neere

Adventures in Love.

to a most pleasant Grove, beautified with sundry ranks of tall trees, which yielded such a pleasant shadow, that they could not pass by that place without entering into it, and enjoying such pleasure as the amenity thereof did offer them. This Grove was so perfectly made by Natures skill, and hedged with such pleasant bushes, that the manner thereof farre exceeded the artificial Gardening invented by the subtilty of mortal men.

As these Lovers walked up and down the Grove, when they came nser the hedge, they satte downe, and listning, they heard certain shepheards singing to the sound of their Dafen Pipes. Which shepheards belonged to the Lady Felicia, and were called Custophilus and Eromaus, Their singing tendered to this sense.

Custophilus.

Apollo seated on his golden Steed,
No sooner gins to climbe the mounting skie,
But *Coridon*, his tender Lambes to feed,
To pleasant field with them doth carefull hie.
He lets them nibble on the savoury grasse,
And wilie sounds his Pipe to praile his Lasse.

Eromaus.

NO sooner *Phillis*, shaking off her sleep,
Doth spie the glory of *Aurea's* face;
But to their wonted pastures drives her Sheep,
And treads the green-grasse with a nipping pace.
She heares her *Coridon* doth sound her name,
She steppeth neer, of him to do the same.

Custophilus.

FAire is my Love (quoth *Coridon* the Swaine)
For in her face sits *Venus* Queen of Love;
Who liketh *Phillis*, liketh not in vaine,
For how could Nature frame a braver Dove?
Ye Heavens the wrathful Gods to anger move,
If *Coridon* to her unfaithful prove,

Eromaus

The Troublesome and Hard

Eromans,

FAire is my Friend (quoth *Phillis* in reply)
For in his forehead *Cupid* takes his place;
And prints his Trophies in his lovely eye,
Wherein should I then but *Coridon* imbrace?
Revenging *Nemesis*, with shame repay
My fault, if ever my true love decay.

Custophilus.

Her lips (saith *Coridon*) are like the hue
That Cherries bear by nature's secret skill:
Her breath as doth the Violet so blew,
The glowing air with fragrant scent doth fill.
And therefore *Coridon* accursed be,
When from his sweet saint *Phillis* he doth glie.

Eromans.

IN beauty like *Alexis* he is fam'd,
(Quoth *Phillis*) like to *Paris* for his pace:
When he in *Ida* beauties judge was nam'd,
And for the fairest deemed *Venus* face.

But did not he poor *Oenone* forsake,
That fault my *Coridon* will never make.

Custophilus.

TH' Antartick pole join to the Arctick may,
(Quoth *Coridon*) and stars fall out the skies:
Yea and the silent dame of night by day,
May run her race, and take her course awry.

But never shall that haplesse day be seen,
Wherein shall *Coridon* forsake his Queen.

Eromans.

THe flames of *Ætna* flashing on the main,
(Quoth *Phillis*) may in tract of time be turned;
In powring showers of never ceasing rain,
And th' Ocean into ashes may be burned.

But never shall the luckiesse hour come,
That *Phillis* shall dislaine her *Coridon*.

Custophilus,

Adventures in Love.

Custophilus.

EArst cold December, down shall way the trees,
With summers fruit, and cleath the earth with flowers :
Earst July shall let running rivers freez,
And deck with snow the tops of climbing towers.
Yea death shall close my life with dreadfull doom,
To *Phillis* ere disloyal I become.

Erasmus.

THe Husbandman with Plough shall care the skie,
And Fishers wrap the Seas in snaring net :
The Birds shall swim, and watery fishes flie,
Ere *Phillis* shall her *Coridon* forget.
And when the fatall Dames have stopt my breath,
My shadow shall him follow after death.

Custophilus.

THus *Coridon* and *Phillis* past the time,
With vowing each to other loyalty :
He could not blow his Pipe, or rowle in Rime,
But she for verse her cunning needs must try.
And if he ceas'd to sing, and gan to speak,
Most wittily she wistt her mind to break.

Erasmus.

BY this *Apollo* doth decline and fall,
He lights from off his steed to take his rest :
And from the Fields these Lovers gins to call,
Who ere they part, a kiss or twain must wrest :
Therewith content, till morning leave they take,
And with their sheep, each haste doth homeward make.

The Troublesome and Hard

CHAP. XIX.

How *Marcelio* met with *Polydore* and *Clenarde*, who declared to them what had hapned to his father *Eugerio* and himself, after they were separated by the tempest.



When these Shepheards had ended their Sonnet, *Marcelio*, *Maffeo*, *Perierio*, *Ismenia*, and the Lady *Brissil*, intending to rise and passe on in their journey, they heard a certaine Knight and a Lady thank the Shepheards for their Musick. And because they could not see what this Knight or Lady was, by reason of the thickness of the hedge, they hearkned to their talk. For the Knight turning himself towards the Lady, spake unto her in this manner. But I pray you sister, have you ever heard in the Court, or in any populous City, any Musick that so delighted the senses, and contented the minde, as this Pastoral fit, which these Shepheards here have bestowed upon us? Certainly brother (quoth she) these Countrey songs, being accompanied with a certain kind of simplicity and goodnesse, please me far better then those melodious tunes which are used in the Courts or Palaces of Kings and Noblemen, being most curiously composed and artificially enterlaced with divers new inventions. And now we talk of this matter, I cannot forget that good time in which *Marcelio* making love to our sister *Alcida*, did use some evening to play on his Lute, and sung so sweetly, that if *Orpheus* his Musick was agreeable unto his, I marvel not though he moved stones and trees to follow him, and fetched *Euridice* from the dusky Groves of *Tartarus*. Ah *Marcelio*, *Marcelio*! Wher art thou now? Say where art thou *Alcida*? Ah most unfortunate wretch that I am! Continually doth Fortune offer me occasion to remember something or other which may encrease my grief, at such time as I intend to recreate my self with some simple pastimes.

Marcelio

Adventures in Love.

Marcelio who was with the other Lovers on the other side of the hedge, hearing very attentively what talk the Knight & the Lady had, was so astonished to hear them name him that he scarce believed that he was the man they named; but began to imagin that it was some other Marcelio and Alcida they spake of. But to be resolved, he climbed on a tree, and looking over the hedge, espied that it was Polydorus and Cleonarde, brother and sister to his Alcida; whereof he was so glad, that he ran unto them, and embraced them both with tears, expressing his exceeding joy, seeing he could not utter one word in a long while he was so suddenly surprized with gladness. Polydor and Cleonarde marvelled greatly what this might mean; for because Marcelio was apparelled like a Shepherd, they knew him not, till such time that his sobs and tears permitted him to utter these speeches. Ah brother of my heart, now do I not care for my misfortune, seeing that I am so happy as to see thee. But what, is not Alcida by thee? Doth she perhaps hide her self in some secret place of the Grove? I beseech thee to let me know some newes of her, if thou knowest any, & deliver me from y^e torment which I suffer. Herewith Polydor & his sister knew Marcelio, and embracing him said.

O most blessed day! O most happy hour! Ah brother to our soul, what cruel disaster hath been cause that thou art deprived of the company of Alcida, and us of her presence? Why dost thou march thus disguised? Why dost thou wear such counterfeit apparel? Ah cruel Fortune! It is most certain that there is no perfect content in any thing whatsoever.

On the other side Masco, with the other Lovers, seeing that Marcelio had so luckily met with Polydor and Cleonarde, were very glad, and so they marched altogether toward the Temple of Diana. And by that time that they had gone two leagues, the Sun being at the highest, forced them to take the shadow of certain trees that grew about a pleasant Fountain. Where they all sat down, and washing their hands in the Christaline water that issued out of the Fountain, each one setting out such provision as they had brought with them,

The Troublesome and Hard

they refreshed themselves, and having satisfied their hunger, after that Marcello had told Polydor and Clenarde what fortune he had after his departure from them, he desired Polydor to let him know what adventures he had had, since that time that he left him with old Eugenio in the Ship, when he with Alcida and Clenarde leaped in the ship-boat, and so were separated from their sight by the tempestuous waves; thinking sure that they had miserably perished with that unfortunate ship. Whereupon Polydor began thus to rehearse how he and his father escaped the danger of the Sea, using as much brevity as he possibly could, because he thought it would be troublesome to the rest of the company, to hear matters that were full of sorrow recited.

After that I was hindered by the Pilot and the Mariner (quoth Polydor) when I had prepared my self to leap into the ship-boat with my father, so that we were compelled to remain in that unfortunate and dangerous ship; our aged father was so distressed, as we may suppose that a loving father may be, who in the latter end of his old age, seeth both his own life and his dear childrens also, in such present danger. He did not greatly complain of the waves that battered the flanks of the ship, neither did he regard the boisterous winds that beset our vessel of all sides; but when he beheld the boat in which you were with Alcida and Clenarde, (which seemed at every moment to be overwhelmed and drowned in the rising waves which seemed to flee over the boat) he thought that his heart was pulled out of his belly; and when you were separated from us, that we could not see you any more, he was so grieved, that I feared lest he should have presently died.

The ship being led by fortunes will went astray up and down the sea for the space of five dayes, after we had lost the sight of the boat, at the end of which space, Phœbus being near his Western home, we found our selves to be in sight of land. Whereof the Mariners rejoiced marvellously, as much for that they had recovered the hope which they had altogether lost and given over, as for that they knew in what coast they were

Adventures in Love.

were arrived ; for the Land which they saw was the pleasantest Countrey and the most delectablest place that the Sun penetrated with his beams, abounding with all kind of delight and pleasure. Insomuch that one of the Mariners began thus to cry out, O blessed and happy land of Valentia, receive those, which the Sea being irritated and provoked to ire, doth vex and afflict. Happy are they that being out of danger to be swallowed up by the greedy waves, enjoy thy fertility, and the meekness of thy aire ! With far more labour doth the Ship eare the Sea, then the labourer doth thy fields. O favourable land, before the sea become more enraged against us, receive us into thy pleasant bosome, seeing we are almost spoiled and spoiled, and thou shalt do as much for us as hee that saveth anothers life. Receive us I say, O beautifull Countrey of Valentia, that we having once set foot on land, never return to sea again.

By these words of the Mariner, we gathered that we were near Valentia, which countrey is famous through all the world. But while the Mariner thus called to the merciless land, the Ship being driven with a furious wind, arrived so nigh the land, that if we had not wanted the boat, we might have reached unto it. Nevertheless, certain fishermen fishing not far from us and seeing our Mast rent our Anchor lost, our sailes torn, and our Ship pittifully battered, perceived in what extremity we were. Therefore with all speed they came to succour us, and with much trouble they fetched us out of the Ship and led us to Land. The joy which we conceived thereof, was such as every man may and ought to imagine. Eugerio and I, we thanked the Fishers for their help, in that our great necessity, according to our duty. But they as men of a good and simple heart, by nature pittifull, regarded not our thanks, nor would take any reward at our hands for their paines, one of them making us this answer. Sirs, thank us not for this deed, for you shall know that we are bound to succour and help all men that are in like necessity, and therefore take our readiness and good will in good part which
forceeth-

The Troublesome and Hard

Exhorteth us to do good unto all men, whose extremities want our aide. And perswade your selves, that as often as such occasion shall be offered as this, we will do the like, although we should thereby hazard our liues, and intrude our selves into danger. For this morning happened such a chance, that if we had not remedied the same as we now have done this, we had been grieved therewith all the dayes of our life. The chance was this. At the point of the day, we went out of our lodges with our nets, and our other ordinary preparations to fish withall; and before we came to the sea side, we saw that the ayre was overcast with a dark myst, and heard that the sea raged by reason of the boysterous winds which blew very ruthly, in so much that we were twice of opinion to return home again, fearing to commit our selves to the dangerous streames, in such a malicious and perilous time. But some of us thought good that we should go to the shore, side to side whether the tempest would slacken, and the weather change. For it happeneth sometimes, that after a great tempest the weather changeth on the sudden, and spreadeth a calm over the whole sea. But as we came to the sea side, we espied a great boat shaken with the wind, and bruised with the waves, without mast, sailes, oares, and all other seafaring instruments, that unless this had been neer the shore, they could not have escaped present death: to be short, they were in the very same case that you even now were. We moved to compassion, without regarding the peril unto which we submitted our selves, presently leaped all into one of our Ships, and with all speed rowed towards those forlorn persons. When we were so neer them, that we might see them that were in the boat, we espied a young Lady, whose face was covered with tears, and her cheeks so blubbered with the water that issued out of her eyes, that it would have moved a Tyger to pittie. Which Lady, as soon as she perceived us rowing towards her, expected our coming, with her armes stretched, and said unto us. Ah brothers, I beseech you to deliver me from this imminent danger with which Fortune menaceth us presently, and move earnestly

Adventures in Love.

earnestly do I beseech you to deliver me from the power of this Traytor, which is by me, who against all reason and equity keepeth me prisoner, and most villanously offereth to force and violate my chastity. When we had understood that, with all speed & diligence that we could (and that not without great danger) we pulled them out of their boat, & setting them aboard on our ship, we brought them to the shore, where she told unto us all the vilany of the traitorous Mariner that was with her; how he had abused her and her sister, with a certain Gentleman allied unto her, which would be long to rehearse. But we have exempted her from the villains and led her to our lodging, where she is yet with our wives and daughters out of all danger to fall in the hands of those malicious and dishonest rascalls that were in the boat with her, whom we have cast into prison not far hence, where we will cause them shortly to be punished and chastised according to their deserts; seeing then that such an event hapned, (as in like manner more may happen) who is there of us all that would not, nay that ought not willingly to hazard their lives in like danger, to recover the welfare of those that are lost, & to do good unto those that are abused and afflicted? When Eugenio my father heard the fisher say so, he thought that the same yong Lady might have been one of his daughters, and although the fisher could not tell us her name, we hoped nevertheless shortly to be resolved of our doubt, by reason that the Lady was not far off, and that the Fisher did lead us unto the house where she was, that we might there take our rest. As we came neer the house we heard the women sing that were within; and we so longed to see the Lady, that we could scarce reach to the house in time enough to know what she was; but entring into the lodging, the Fishers wife with her daughters and her maids, marveling to see what new guests came thither, they all held their peace, and left their song; and among them did we see the damosel whereof the Fisher had spoken, whom we incontinently knew, and were of her known, for it was my sister Clede, who is here present at this time, and may tell you how she
fared

The Troublesome and Hard

pared after that she was separated from you, by means of the Traytor Bartophamus, and how she came so luckily unto that selfsame place where both she and we were saved, by the help of those pitiful and courteous Fishers; but when we had heard of the treason of the same Villain Bartophamus, of the necessity of Alcida, and of your captivity, I leave it to your discretion to consider how grieved we were, as Clenarde my sister wel perceived, and may witness; for the joy of our arrival to land, and deliverie out of that present danger, was turned into mourning, all our pleasure into grief, and all our comfort into despair. Insomuch that the fisher seeing how pittifully we were grieved and afflicted, for the mishap of Alcida and your self, he comforted us as much as lay in him, and told us of a certain Lady called Felicia, bearing rule over the temple of Diana, saying that she had such infinite knowledge and wisdom, that she could remedy our evil by telling us what was become either of Alcida or your self, whereof we were very glad; for that was the chiefest thing that we desired to know. Wherefore we resting there that night, as soon as Phoebus had saluted the Fishers cottage we rose, and thanking the fisher and his wife for their inestimable goodness and friendship towards us, and rewarding them according to our power, we departed betimes in the morning, leaving the Mariners there. So be short we marched, Eugenio, Clenarde, and I, till we reached unto the temple of Diana, where we saw the Palace where the wise Lady Felicia holdeth her residence. We beheld the magnificent building both of the place and of the temple, we saw the most pleasant Gardens, the sumptuous towers, the most wise and discreet Lady, and many other things that have so suspended our minds with admiration and marvel, that I am not able to make rehearsal according thereto. We saw in like manner the most excellent and beautiful Nymphs that attend on the Lady Felicia, and many other shepherds both men and maids, and divers Knights, Gentlemen, Ladies, and Gentlewomen, that were come thither to have their harmes remedied by the sage Felicia, who had given them great comfort

Adventures in Love.

in their love and necessity. But as concerning us, the aid and help which she hath done us untill this present, is, that she hath kept our father Eugerio by her, willing us to go unto these quarters, and not return untill we had occasion to be better contented. And forasmuch as we have received no small contentment and joy of your life and presence, we think we have sufficient occasion offered us to return to the sage Felicia; especially seeing we have in her company left our aged father all alone, and desolate, among strangers. I know that it importeth greatly for his comfort, that we should find out our sister Alcida; But seeing that fortune in so long time hath barred us from understanding where she is, or hearing any thing of her, I think it convenient that we deprive not our father any longer of our company and presence.

After Polidor had ended his discourse, all the company marvelled at the strangeness of his and Cleonardes adventures, comforted Marcelio, who wept bitterly for Alcidaes sake: and as soon as his tears would permit him, he recounted unto Polidor and Cleonarde, what had hapned unto him since he saw them last. But Ismenia with the Lady Brisil, Perierio and Maffeo, having heard the report that Polidor made of the sage Lady Felicia, were pricked with a greedy desire to arrive to the Temple of Diana; partly because they wished to see that famous Lady, and partly for that they gathered by the praise which Polidor gave her, for her discretion & wisdom, that they should have occasion to hope for the redress & remedy of their harms. For they were in great hope that some of them whom they so diligently & painfully sought for either were already among those gentlemen, damosels, & shepherds which Polydor said that he had seen with the Lady Felicia, or should be ere long by means of the said Ladies singular wisdom and experience.

The Sun by this time began to fall in the Western plains, and thereby was not so hot but that Polydor thought good to march forward, that they might in good time reach to the palace of the Lady Felicia. Which liking all the company they rose all and went on their journey. They had not gone passing a
I
league

The Troublesome and Hard

league and a half, but they met a certain nymph, whom the Lady Felicia, foreknowing the coming of this worthy company, had sent to let them know of certain things which she would have them acquainted with before they came unto her, to the end y^e all things might succeed according as she through her incredible wisdom thought convenient. Marcello therefore with the rest of his company, coming to the place where the nymph was, saluted her very curteously as she likewise did him and all the other that were by him, and asked them whether they were going: whereunto they answered, that they w^{er}e toward the temple of Diana. She hearing that said; for as much as I can gather by the valor and worthinesse of your persons, I believe y^e Lady Felicia, of whose nymphs I am one, will be very glad of your company. And seeing that Phœbus doth now begin to prepare for his evening lodging, & the day draweth to an end, I wil return home with you, for I am assured ye shall be received with great triumph. They thanked her greatly, that she would keep them company, and went on with her towards the temple. For they conceived marvellous hope by her words, and although Polydor & Clenarde had been in the Pallace before, yet they remembred not that they had seen her among the other nymphs, by reason of y^e multitude of the nymphs of the Lady Felicia, who all of them obeying the commandement of their sage Lady, are imployed in sundry charges and diuers places. So that Polydor asked this nymph how she was called, whereupon she answered her name was Arethea. Clenarde demanded what news was in the Ladies Pallace: she answered, that the chiefest news she knew was y^e two hours before her departure from thence, there arrived a young Lady in the habit of a shepheardesse, who being espied by an aged knight that was at that present with the Lady Felicia, was known to be his daughter: and that because she had a long time gone astray through most parts of the world, the aged knight her father was so joyfull of her arrival, that the rumour of that young Ladies fortune, was spread through all the villages about the temple of Diana. Marcello listening attentively

Adventures in Love.

tentibely to these words, greedily desiring to know whether
 the Lady she spake of were Alcida, could not but interrupt the
 nymph as she went to go forward in the relation of her news,
 and so he asked her how the aged Knight was called. Unless
 my memory fail me, answered the nymph, he is called Eugerio,
 and his daughter Alcida. Wherewith Marcelio surprized with
 exceeding joy, after he had a long time stood as if he had been
 in a trance, at length burst out into these words. Ah most ble-
 ssed troubles that take end by so prosperous an adventure! ah
 fortune and as he meant to have gone forward, he could not ut-
 ter one word more, but fell down on the ground wholly asto-
 nished. The Lady Brisil, Ismenia, and Clenarde, flocked about
 him to encourage him, and did so much prevail, that he came
 to himself again. In the meantime, Polydor and Clenarde,
 were marvellous joyfull at that news, seeing that all their
 misfortunes should take end by the coming of their sister
 Alcida. Maffeo, Pericrio, and the Lady Brisil with Ismenia, were
 likewise glad for Marcelio's sake, and hoped likewise that as
 the Lady Felicia had wrought his blisse, so she would likewise
 being moved with compassion of their miseries, redress
 their grief. Ismenia desirous to hear something of her hus-
 band Alexander, said to Arethee, fair Nymph, I was mar-
 vellously well contented, and received great joy to hear of
 the general gladness that is in the Ladies Pallace, by reason
 of the arrivall of the Lady Alcida: but yet I should conceive
 more perfect pleasure, if it would please you to tell me what
 she heard of account there is at this present in the pallace.
 Arethee answered, you shall find divers shepheards of account
 whose names I remember not, yet two or three I know a-
 bove the rest. There is one shepheard called Petulca of whom
 the Lady Felicia maketh great account of, for his wit and cha-
 rity. Besides there is a shepheard called Philoreus, whose
 presence pleaseth the Lady Felicia as much. The Lady Brisil
 hearing Petulca named, marvelled to know how he came thi-
 ther and to what end; and therefore asked the nymph, whe-
 ther she knew the cause of his coming thither. The nymph

The Troublesome and Hard

answered, that as she remembred, he came to hear of a certain young shepheard whom he sometime had loved instead of a young maid, under the name of Sybilla he being appparelled in the habit of a shepherdesse and dwelling with his wife, made the world beleebe they were two sisters. And many other things, which I cannot (quoth Arethee) now rehearse, shal you understand of him when you come to the Pallace, concerning those two sisters, which I promise you are wonderfull strange. Strange they are indeed (quoth Brisil) if you knew all fair nymph. Merily I beleebe (quoth Arethee) that you are either the shepheard Periander or his supposed sister. Either of them indeed (quoth Brisil) but my name is not Periander. I promise you (quoth Arethee) that my Lady will be singularly glad when she seeth you: for I have heard her talk much of you and your spouse Periander.

Ilinenia although she heard not that her beloved Lexander was among the other shepheards which Arethee had named yet for that she heard that the Lady Brisil had heard something concerning her matters, she took the more heart in her own cause, and was glad for the poor distressed Dutchesse sake, hoping that she should receive comfort of the Lady Felicia.

Maffeo and Perierio who had heard nothing of their Ladies, were nevertheless of as good chear as the rest, hoping that when they were come to the Temple of Diana, they should receive as much comfort as any: because the Lady Felicia had written to him and Marcelio, as you have heard before.

Adventures in Love.

CHAP. XX.

How Perierio and his company came to the Temple of Diana, how they were entertained by the Sage Lady Felicia, and the great joy that was there made.

His worthy company being convoyed by Arethec the Nymph, came into a fair large place which was before the gate of the Pallace. Weere they saw a most gallant Dame come out of the house, being apparelled in a black Velvet Cowne, with a large Veile of precious Laine over her head, accompanied with three beautifull Nymphs, resembling the stately Goddess Juno, when she went to intreat Æolus to disturb the Seas, when Æneas sayled towards Latium.

Arethec espying her, advertised all the company that it was the Lady Felicia, and the three Nymphs, Doride, Cynthia and Polidora. And approaching near unto her, fell down at her feet and saluted her, as in like manner Marcellio with the rest of his company, did in all submisse and humble manner. Felicia seemed to be wonderfully pleasant for their arrivall, and spake unto them with a most chearfull countenance, saying, **W**orthy Knights, Ladies, and notable Shepheards, howbeit that the pleasure which I take in this your presence is great, yet that content which you shall reap by mine shall be no lesse. But forasmuch as you are overtrabelled by reason of your wearisome journey, go now take your rest, and forget your sorrows; seeing the one cannot be wanting unto you in my house, and I am to take care for the other by means of my skill. They thanked her most humbly, and finally took their leave of her, but she caused Polydor and Glenard to stay with her, saying she had something to say unto them: but the others were led by Arethec to a side place of the Pallace, where they were feasted that night, and provided of all things necessary

The Troublesome and Hard

necessary for their cherishment and rest. This house was so sumptuous and magnificent, garnished with such rich moveables, and beautified with such delightfull gardens, orchards, rivers and fountains, that there is nothing comparable to the excellency thereof.

Marcello, Maffeo, Perierio, with Ismenia, and the Lady Brissil, were lodged in that part of the pallace, which abutted upon the garden, in sundry chambers being hang'd with cloth of gold, and most precious tapistrie, wrought with admirable cunning. Supper was prepared for them most magnificently, and it was served up unto them in vessels of Gold and Crystal. And when the night was approached, and bed time at hand, they were laid on such good and easie beds, that howbeit their bodies were wearied by travel, yet the softnesse of the delicate down, with the hope which Felicia had given them, provoked them to a most pleasant and sweet sleep.

On the other side, the Lady Felicia, with Polydor and Clenarde, (whom she willed to make no mention of the arrival of Marcello and the rest of his company) went into one of her most pleasant gardens, where Eugerio walked alone, his daughter Alcida onely being by him, who although she yet had on the same shepherdlike apparel that she did wear at her first coming there, nevertheless was incontinently known of her brother and sister Polydor and Clenarde.

It were impossible for me to expresse the joy which old Eugerio made for the happy meeting of all his children, whom he so dearly loved, embracing them one after another, and welcoming Polydor and Clenarde with floods of tears flowing out of his aged eyes. Alcida greatly welcomed Polydor her brother, and Clenarde her sister, but farre more affectionately cherished him then Clenarde, imagining that she had purposefully gone away with Marcello, and left her alone and distressed in the desert and solitary Isle of Formentera, as you have heard before.

But the Lady Felicia intending to unfold these errors, and make the cause thereof knowne unto Alcida, desiring to end
their

Adventures in Love.

their wonderfull misfortunes. and restore them to the blessed estate wherein they were before they committed themselves to cruel Neptune, to saile towards the haven of Lisbon, there to celebrate the concluded Marriage in the presence of the Lusitan King their Sovereign; she spake unto Alcida in this manner.

Most noble and beautifull Alcida, notwithstanding that Fortune hath beene so great an enemy unto you in afflicting you with so many troubles and vexations, yet cannot you deny, but that by reason of the great content which you now enjoy, you are fully revenged of the injury which she hath hitherto done you. And for as much as the errour which you have lived in, until this present day, without cause abhorring your Marcelio is sufficient (if you yet hold the same opinion) to alter your heart, and to breed his exceeding misery; it is necessary that I should declare unto you, how that you are terrible deceived if you be of that opinion. For the presumption which you have of Marcelio, is quite contrary and otherwise then you mean; for when you were left alone in the Isle, that came not by his fault, but by the villany of a certain traitor suborned by Fortune to aggravate your mishap, who to recompence the wrong which she hath offered you, hath directed your steps hither towards me, in whose mouth you shall not find any other then truth. Your sister Clenarde shall largely tell you all that concerneth this matter, and how it wholly standeth, mark well what she shall say unto you and give credit to her words; for as for me, I swear unto you, that whatsoever she shall rehearse concerning this, shall be most certain and veritable.

Whereupon presently Clenarde began to inform Alcida how all things had chanced, excusing Marcelio and her selfe, and largely declared the treason of Bartophamus, and all that which already hath been said touching the same. Alcida having very attentively given ear to her sisters speech, was wonderfully well contented to know the verity and truth of the case; and as she did drive away and exclude her former rancor and false opinion from her heart, so did she in like manner
expel

The Troublesome and Hard

manner expel all such anger and hate, which she had undeservably conceived against Marcello. Wherefore she now knowing the error, and perceiving that she wrongfully had given over the love which in times past she had boyn to Marcello the sparkles of love that had so long been raked up in the ashes of oblivion, began to shew their force in her, and the affection which had slept thus long, began now to waken: insomuch that she said unto Felicia, Madam. I acknowledge my fault and the singular pleasure which you have done me in bringing me into the knowledge thereof. But being at this present time delivered from that false opinion, and as well affectioned towards Marcello as ever I was; who for that he is now absent, if I may not enjoy his company, I shall not obtain the perfect joy which I hoped to receive by your means, nay rather shall I conceive another grief so excessive and intolerable, that I shall be compelled to sue for new favours at your graces hands to remedy the same.

It is a manifest token of love (answered the Lady Felicia) to fear the absence, but as for that you shall have no cause to care. The Sun hath now drawn in his beams, it is time for you to retire, and to go to your chambers to take your rest with your father and your sister; to morrow morning will we talk of the rest. Therewith she went forth of the garden, and so did Eugenio with his daughters, and went to the place which Felicia had appointed for them: which was separated from that part where Marcello with his company was lodged.

As soon as Phœbus had harnessed his Steeds to run his wonted course, Eugenio, Polidor, Alcida, Cleonarde, and other Gentlemen and Shepheards, that were in the Pallace at that time met together in the garden, where sitting by a fountain before the chambers where the Lady Basil was lodged with Ismenia, Penerio, Marcello, and Maffeo, began one to play on the Lute, another on the Citharen, another on the Bandoza, others on their Flutes, and some sung prick songs; insomuch that with their musick they awaked the Lady Basil, who called Ismenia, and she knocked up Penerio, and the other Knights that

Adventures in Love.

that lay in the chambers above her. Who all of them leaning in their windows, although they might not see all those that sat at the Fountain, by reason of certain Lawrell trees that grew about it, yet because it was so neer to their chambers, they could hear what they said. They therefore listened very attentively each of them. Matteo whether he might hear the voice of Eleonora (for he hoped greatly that as the Lady Felicia had written unto him as well as unto Marcello, that therefore in like manner, Eleonora should have been arrived at the Palace as well as Alcida; notwithstanding that the Nymph Arethee had not made any mention of her) and Marcello, whether he might hear his Alcida. As for Perenio he could not hope to see the Lady whom he loved, and therefore was more sad then the rest, and looked out at the window more to forget the fantasies by the pleasant Musick of those that were in the Garden, and to pass the time in beholding the beauty of divers Ladies and Shepherds which were there. The Lady Brisil harkned whether Petulca the Shepheard sung, to know whether he had heard any thing of Periander. But Ilmenia being sorely discomfited because Arethee the Nymph had not named Lexander, when she asked what Shepherds were in the Palace, thought sure that he was not among them that were by the Fountain; but she had better luck then she wist of; for incontinently she heard a Shepheard. Who sitting alone, after he had sounded his Corne-muse, began thus to complain to himself.

Sonnet.

Aurora's looks expell the duskish night,
And after darkness doth the day enlue:
When Nymphs to field make haste for their delight,
And Birds do scale the ayre of fable hue.
But I endure a never ending night,
Sith no day may my grieved heart delight.

The Troublesome and Hard

For neither can *Aurora's* joyfull face,
Nor tune of Birds that sing for mans reliefe :
Out of my heart the night of sorrow race,
Or drive away the darknes of my grief,
Yet nothing can my soule from sighes release,
Nor yet my voyce from dolefull accents cease.

Ah mirthless Flowers, sith she is lost and gone,
Whole beauty your *Aurora* doth surpass :
Abate your pride and wither in the Sun,
Whole harmful beames doe scorch the fainting grass ;
For since that beauty which I here declare,
Is your *Aurora* but a night of care.

Imenia hearing him sing out of her chamber window,
knew that it was Lexanders voyce, whereof she was glad,
though sorrow to hear him so grievously complain, thinking
that he so bewailed the absence of some other, and not for love
of her self. But she was soon delivered from that suspicion,
for after he had ended his Sonnet, he burst out into these
words with a most pittiful sigh.

Ah poore soule ! what an high offence hast thou committed,
to believe such false accusations against thy sweet Imenia
who honoureth thee above all wights in the world, whereas
thou least dost deserve it at her hands ? And therefore doest
thou worthily suffer the torment which thy lightnesse and
credulity hath procured thee. Ah my dear Imenia, how much
better had it been that thou hadst not taken the paines to
coursse the world like a forlorn wight to seek after thy unworthy
thy Alexander, that he now acknowledging his fault, might re-
turn home to his house, and there find thee. Ah traitress Syl-
veria, and was this the best reward thou couldest afford me for
the great pleasure and service I have done thee since thy
childhood ? Yet I could account it a benefit that thou hast en-
sormed me of thy horrible treason, if thou hadst come in time,
for seeing thou hast stayed so long, thy advertisement hath ser-
ved

Adventures in Love.

bed to no end but to increase my grief, and multiply my sorrows.

When Iimenia had heard that, she thought it time to thank the Gods for her fortune, and to give over all care and grief, Marcello, Maffio, Penierio, and Duches Brisil, were glad for her sake, and seeing that so by little and little, their company was comforted, they were so encouraged, that they doubted not but that they should all obtain their wished desires in time, judging that the Lady Felicia was the onely Patroness that could redresse the sorrows of all such true amours as were afflicted by reason of their sincere love.

In the mean time, Iimenia was so tickled with desire to enjoy the wished company of her Lexander, that she had almost thrown her self out of the window, and so fallen down headlong into the Garden where he was: but seeing that her company hindered her from that unhappy meeting, she would have presently gone to the Garden, had not Marcello and the Duches Brisil exhorted her to stay till she knew the Lady Felicia's pleasure, who seeing the day appeared, and the Sun began to glance through her windows, sent Arethee the Nymph unto Marcello and the rest of his company: Wherefore as Iimenia was talking with Marcello, of the great desire she had to be with Lexander, Arethee entring into the chamber where they were, and with a most courteous countenance said unto them: Noble Gentlemen and fair Shepherds, I beseech God to send you so good hap and fortune as you deserve. The sage Lady Felicia hath sent me hither, to know of you whether you have rested better this night then the nights befoze, and whether ye have received more content then of custome you are wont to do. Besides also hath she commanded me to lead you into the Garden, whither she will presently come to speak with you. But you Marcello, must put on this sute, which the Lady hath sent you, and put off your Shepherds apparel, to the end that you may be cloathed according to your estate.

Iimenia would not stay till Marcello spake, but her self returned this answer unto the Nymph, for joy of the good news

The Troublesome and Hard

which she brought. O blessed Pymph, what a good morning have you given us? How are we beholding unto you? God will recompence the pleasure which you have done us, seeing that our ability sufficeth not. As for the content which we have received this night it is greater then I can declare, seeing that this morning we have been so happy as that I have recovered my life, and these other Gentlemen hope to obtain the same; wherefore to obey so worthy a Lady as sage Felicia, we are ready to go into the Garden with you to know her pleasure.

Then Arethec took from another Pymph that came with her, the costly and rich apparel which the Lady Felicia had sent Marcello to put on, and helped him to cloath himself in that sort which was wrought in pure gold & precious pearls, most sumptuous and bravely placed. As soon as he was apparelled they went forth of the chamber and followed Arethec into the Garden, where she led them into an Arboz, whence they could not see those that sat at the Fountain, and taking the Lady Buhl and Perierio by the hand, left Marcello, Maffeo, and Ilmenia in the Arboz, leading Perierio and the Duches to the Palace where she left Perierio in a fair chamber under the bed-chamber of the Felicia, willing him there to expect the Ladies coming, and so mounting the Marble staires, led the Duches up to Felicias chamber, where the Lady her self running to the dooz, welcomed her in this sort:

Most gracious Princess, pardon me, for that I honoured you not yesterday according to your merit and estate for that I as yet knew not the worthiness and excellency of your person; but this morning as I consulted in the Temple of sacred Diana our Soberaign Goddess, concerning your case and of your company, I was informed of the Nobility of your stock, of the antiquity of your house, of the perfections of your beauty and vertues of your minde and of your loyalty in the sacred Lawes of sincere Love and Chastity. Know therefore most excellent Princess, that the Gods being moved with your incomparable vertue, have sent you hither not only to enjoy the
love

Adventures in Love.

love of the beautifull and balorous young Prince Periander, but also to be hoysed to the top of perpetual blisse and to live not thy self onely, but all the Progeny that shall issue from thy fruitful worthy body, in such honour as no time, no misfortune, or nothing whatsoever shall be able to abate or diminish. In the mean time till the gods send us further knowledge concerning this affair encourage your self noble Princess, and give over all care and grief; let me take thought in your behalf, and I promise you that I will not sleep upon the matter. But till occasion be offered that it may be put in practise, I shall desire you to take patience to lodge in this my simple and solitary house, which though it be not comparable to the princely place of your bringing up, I mean the famous Court of Albion, yet I doubt not but for the recreation, pleasure and content which you shall have in my company, you will think well of it, howsoever you find it farre inferiour to king's Palaces, for the baseness of the building. Most heavenly Lady, (answered the Duchesse) what thanks I may yield you for your high deserts, I know not and therefore perswade your self that I wish you as much recompence as a mortal heart may conceive. As concerning my abode with you, I am ready to stay with you as long as you please, neither shall I think ill of the place, seeing that in magnificent building it surpasseth the stateliest Palace that I think may be in the world. But grant it were (as you say) inferiour to the mean Court of Albion, yet considering the excellency of your person, it may be judged the most pleasant and delectable place under the vale of heaven. If you like so well of my company already (replied the Lady Felicia) I hope you will increase your liking when you have made trial of my readiness to pleasure you. But in the mean time, because I must go unto the rest of your company that is in your Garden, if it please you, put off your shepherds attire, and apparel your self with these Robes, which though they be as precious and costly as ever was any that entred in my wardrobe, yet are they not so sumptuous as your vertues deserve. And for that
you

The Troublesome and Hard

you have so chaste ly behaved your self, and as yet kept your virginity inviolated contrary to the opinion of all men whereas you have notwithstanding so long kept secret company with your loving Periander, reserving your Virginity, and consecrating the same to Diana, until such time as your Marriage Rights being celebrated, you may by the laws of Hymæneus, give an honourable adieu to virginity, and enjoy the fruits of your chaste love; I give you this bunch of Roses which shall not wither in winter or fade in the summer, but in token of your chastity reserve their natural bigness and fresh colour as long as you live. As Felicio had so said, whilst her Nymphs apparelled the Duchesse, she called Periclio by Arethee, & saluting him very curtesously told him that she had not been less mindful of him then of the other of his company that night. Wherefore quoth she, put on the clothes that I will send thee, and stay for my coming; as for all the rest, disburthen your self of all care, and let me alone; and so she departed from Periclio, who went to the chamber where Arethee had led him, and incontinently espied Arethee coming with a fair sute of black velvet as he was wont to wear before his father was exiled from Venice. Arethee having helpt him to put on his clothes, returned to the Lady Felicia, who seeing that Duchesse Bristol was ready, set a most precious Coronet on her head on the top whereof she put the bunch of Roses, and taking her by the hand, seeing Periclio apparelled, bid him follow her into the Garden; so she went towards the Fountain where aged Eugerio sat with his daughters, Alcida and Glenarde, and his son Polydor, with other knights and shepherds, among whom was the shepherd Petulca, and Alexander also. And you must note that the Lady Felicia had also caused Alcida that morning to leave off her shepherds coat, and apparel her self in rich attire according to her estate, that when she should meet with Marcelio (who now was in like manner most sumptuously appareled) she should not be disfigured with base clothes, though Alcida her self as yet knew nothing of Marcelios being there. As then Eugerio and the rest of those that sat at the Fountain, saw the
Lady

Adventures in Love.

Lady Felicia coming, being accompanied with so beautiful a Princess, marvelled greatly who the same young Lady should be, and every one doing his obeysance to the Lady Felicia, and her company saluted her most humbly, as she likewise with Brisil, and Perierio did them. The Duches seeing Alcida, wondered at her beauty, as likewise Alcida did at her; for by reason that she was so sumptuously and richly apparelled, her beauty which surpassed all Gentlewomen of her time, seemed rather to be heavenly then mortal. And though Polydor and Clenarde had seen her the day before, yea and gone two or three leagues in her company yet the change of her attire so alter'd her, that they as yet knew not that she was the Lady Brisil, whose beauty was insured by that base Shepherdlike attire. But Felicia calling Alcida and the Shepherd Lexander unto her, went toward the place where Marcelio and Ilmenia with Maffeo, stayed for her coming. They seeing her come, as they marvelled at the supernaturall beauty of the Duches, which had thus long been shadowed under a rustick habit, so were they exceedingly merry to see her so well accompanied to their joy and comfort; for Marcelio saw his Alcida of one side of her, and Ilmenia saw her Lexander on the other side. You may also imagine what a sudden joy Alcida conceived to see her beloved Marcelio, and Lexander to see his dear Ilmenia, whose absence he but one hour before so pittifully lamented.

After that Marcelio, Ilmenia, and Maffeo, had humbly saluted Felicia, and embraced, Marcelio his Alcida, and Ilmenia her Lexander, the Lady Felicia left the Duches and Perierio there with them, and calling Maffeo unto her said, Most valiant Knight, though the gods have not as yet gladded you with the sight of her whom you seek, in such manner as the rest of your company; yet let me intreat you to be of as good cheer as these, seeing the joy which they have had, or is yet present, is to come and future unto you. You shall have no worse entertainment then you have had hitherto, therefore if that like you I pray you stay with me till you hear more tidings of your beloved sponse, and let me care for the rest.

Gracious

The Troublesome and Hard

Gracious Lady (quoth Maffeo) seeing I cannot give you acquittance for your great deserts, I can do no lesse then rest your servant for ever, ready to do your Ladiship pleasure at all times though with hazard of my life. As concerning my wife Eleonora, I doubt not of her presence before long, seeing your Ladiship willeth me to leave that care unto your self. And therefore what you think good, I cannot but allow, and what you please to have me to do, I wil put in practise; being ready to go or stay, to depart or to remain, or any thing else whatsoever it may please you to prescribe. Herewith Felicia taking her leave, entred into her Palace again leaving Maffeo, Pererio, and the Duches by Marcello with his Alcida, and Ismenia, with her Shepheard Lexander. And although Lexander and Ismenia were but of base birth yet were they endued with such excellent conditions and qualities, that they might have worthily complained of Fortune and Nature, that they had not allotted them Nobility of race. Yet howsoever they were of low parents, they nevertheless behaved themselves so in the company of Gentlemen & Gentlewomen, that they were beloved of all men, and none knew them but coveted to keep company with them, were they of never so high estate. They then being in company with these excellent and famous personages, brought over the time with pleasant parley until noon, at which time the bell rung to dinner. The table being covered in the midst of the Garden under a pleasant bower, the Lady Felicia came thither with Eugenio, with his son, Polydor, and his daughter Cienarde, the Shepheard Petulca, and Philoreus, where, after Marcello had embraced his father in law Eugenio, who was exceeding glad to see his sonne in law Marcello; the Lady Felicia taking Princess Brissil by the hand late downe, and willed all the rest of the company to place themselves at the table. I will not here declare what Lordly cheer was made them, nor how magnificently they were served by those beautiful Symphs, nor yet with what precious and sumptuous vessels their meat was brought to the board; but this will I only say that the beauty of the guests, the countenance

Adventures in Love. 111

tenance of the Lady President, the sight of the Nymphs the sweetness of the Musick the delicateness of the fare, the pleasantness of the Bowler, the gainness of the Garden, and in a word, the incomparable excellency of things there present, was sufficient with the penetrating force thereof to revive the senses even of dead men, and quickning their spirits to make them live againe.

There might you have seen the Lady welcome her guests with such pleasant countenance, that they tooke more pleasure in beholding the same, then in tasting their meat; and the guests so courteously returned her thanks, generally over the whole board, that she had rather have missed her cates then her company; for she took no small delight to see so many distressed persons by her meanes merrily drink one to the other, as if they had never known of any sorrow or grief; for the nature of that place is of such force and efficacy, that whosoever entred into it, was combred with no care.

Now neither did aged Eugerio remember the cruelty wherewith Fortune danted him and his children on the Sea, nor Alcida think of the Isle of Formentera where she was left alone, and in the Rock engraved her protestation, that she would never after fancy man again, nor Clenarde mention the treasons of Bartophanus against her and Marcelio. Now did Maffeo not dream that his Eleonora was taken from him while he slept, nor that his cousin Sylvestro deceived him of his hereditie. Now did not Perierio sigh for the sight of the Lady that wounded his heart with the strokes of love in the wood; Now did not Alexander and Ismenia trouble their baine with the malicious subtilty of their mother-in-law Felisarde, and the Traittresse Sylveria. To be short, now did not the Duches Bridal call to memory the Traytor Mafficourt, the Fortune-telling in Spain, nor the cunning deceit of Bergama, suborned by Malorena. Neither did Petulca now muse on his Love Sybil, whom he so earnestly loved, she being but Sybil in counterfeite dissembling, alias called Periander, a man as fit to play the wooer, as Petulca himselfe. Neither did now Philoreus

¶

(the

The Troublesome and Hard

(the other Shepheard that was there, and was named by the Nymph Arethee, unto Ismenia, being asked what Shepheards of account there were in the Palace, of which Philoreus, we shall have occasion to say more hereafter) complain of his ill hap; nor any of all the other Gentlemen or Shepheards that were there, did bewaile or lament their misfortunes. For the heavenly harmony of the Musick which diuers of the Nymphs made when dinner was serued, some playing on the Wandoza, some on the Virginal, some sounding their Cornets, others their Cornemuses, others their Harps, others the Cithren, others the Lute, others the Gittren, others blowing their Flutes, others the Recorder, and diuers other instruments that would be too long to name, so ravished their senses, that they thinking themselves to be in some earthly Paradise, could not but be delighted, and barred even from all thought and imagination of discontent.

The Musick ended, the three chiefest Nymphs, Doride, Cynthia, and Polydora, sung this Sonnet, to recreate their Ladies guests that sat at the table.

Doride.

FLie cutting care to hollow Caves,
Flie from this sacred place:
Flie grieue to uncouth Groves, and let
us pleasing joy embrace,

No teares may torture now, no sobs
may grieve, nor sighes may vex:
No wo may wound, no thought may threat,
nor sorrow make us yex.

Our paine is past, our dolour done,
we sayle with prosperous winde:
No passion now, nor trouble may,
disturb our quiet minde.

Cynthia

Adventures in Love.

Cynthia.

The Sea doth flow as well as ebbe,
and waves both mount and fall:
As stormy Tempests doe disturb,
So calmes do quiet all,

The Summers Sunne produceth Flowers,
which fragrant scents do yield:
Though winter aire in snowie robes,
doth wrap the barren field.

The sight of *Phœbus* Lordly face,
doth drive away the raine:
And *Titanes* as oft is full,
as she is in the waine.

Polydora.

Let Furies fret, let *Charon* curse,
let brawling *Cerberus* bawle:
Let *Radamanthus* rage, let *Pluto*
chafe, and *Minos* brawle.

Let all the Fiends of *Acheron*,
even spet out all their spight.
They shall not marre the mirth we make,
by high *Diana's* might:

Which all those that doe sojourn in
this sacred place, exempts
From hellish harme, from wracking woe,
and Fortunes shrewd attempts.

The three Nymphs having ended the Sonnet, dinner
was ended, the cloath taken up, and the Lady Felicia rise
with all her Guests walked out of the Bower into the
part of the Garden, where she called Maffeo and

The Troublesome and Hard

spake unto him in this maner, *Worthy Knight*, for that I know your chiefest blisse consisteth in the finding of your wife *Eleonora*, I mean by the help of the gods, and the especial fauour of *Diana*, to help you unto your hearts desire, with all the speed that I may. And therefore seeing the same is brought to passe, the more happy you shall deem your self. I will put my skill in practise out of hand. Wherefore incontinently may it please you to depart from me, and go to the place where you left your child, and taking it thence return to me again with it, and let me care for your rest. *Maffeo* yielding the venerable Dame singular thanks for all her fauours, humbly took his leave of her and all the company, and presently departed from the Palace, taking his way toward the Village where he left his young *Alonso*, after he lost *Eleonora* in the highway while he slept, where we will leave him pacing in his journey, and talk of those that remained in the Palace with the Lady *Felicia*.

CHAP. XXI.

How *Perierio* drunk the two Potions of Oblivion and Understanding, and likewise the Discourse that was between the Lady *Brissl* and *Petulca*.



Maffeo being gone, the Lady *Felicia* taking *Perierio* apart, led him into the Palace, and brought him into her study which was so exorned and beautified with sundry volumes, that it seemed rather to be the Library of some grave Philosopher, than the Counting house of a Lady; for there was no Book, no Author, no Writer, that was in estimation at those times, but the Lady *Felicia* had him in her Bibliothick. Now having *Perierio* there alone, she thought it time to execute that which his destinies had appointed. and therefore said unto him, Courageous Gentleman, although you have not as yet told me one word touching the cause of your coming hither, yet

Adventures in Love.

I know it as well as you can tell me. Is it not to enjoy the love of a Lady which you never saw but once? I expect no answer for I know it is. And I pray you tel me whether you are of that opinion yet or no? and whether you are constant in your love, ready to undertake any labour to obtain the same? But ere you give me an answer quaffe out this goblet, in token of your good will towards me th t with your hearts content.

Pererio taking the Goblet, drank out the Liquor that was in it cheerfully, which had such vertue that it took away the memory of Love, how deep soever it was rooted in the hearts of mortal creatures. He therefore having taken his draught, answered thus, Most prudent Lady I am ashamed that I am come hither unto you, having, yea knowing no cause why I should trouble your Ladiship, and unless I had received such exceeding pleasure in viewing your Ladiships most sumptuous Palace, I should be sorry that ever I left my aged father and loving sisters sorrowfull and mourning at home for my absence. Well (quoth the Lady Felicia) I am glad that my Medicine hath taken so good effect. But I pray you take one draught more at my request, which shall not be of the same liquor as the other, but more fruitful; and though it be something more bitter in the taste, it shall nevertheless be far more sweeter in operation then the other. Pererio taking the cup drank the potion, though with some difficulty, by reason of the sternesse thereof, which was nothing so gentle as the former potion of oblivion. But Felicia seeing that he had courageously forced himself to leave nothing in the cup, well done (quoth she) for though the root of science knowledge and learning be bitter, yet are the flowers which it produceth, most sweet and pleasant. And as he thus spake, she perceived that her second potion had done no less good then the first. For it had not only sharpened his wit and grinded his understanding, being more apt to receive the impression of learning, but ravished him with such desire to attain to the knowledge of Philosophy (whereunder I comprehend all kind of learning) that

The Troublesome and Hard

that his minde was quite changed from Venus to Minerva, and from Cupids Court to the Mount Parnassus. In so much that he began to unclose the clasps of Felicias Volumes, and untie the strings of her Books, being spurred thereto with a fervent zeale to know the contents thereof; where we will leave him talking with the Lady about the liberall Sciences, and such other matters concerning scholasticall parley, and speak of those whom we left in the Garden, where Marcelio and Alcida walked together in one Alley, Ilmenia with Alexander in another; Eugenio with his son Polydor and his daughter Glenarde, walked by the River which closed up one end of the Garden. The shepheards Petulca and Philoreus, with the rest of the company, sate on a bed of camomile, and Duches Brissil walked alone in an Arboz of Roses, where the dye that beautified her vermillion cheeks, strove with the Roses for superiority in perfection of colour.

Thus walking alone, she espied the shepheard Petulca sitting among other shepheards, and desiring to know of him whether he came thither about Perianther, as she had understood of the Nymph Arethec, she stepped by them, and saluting them, said.

Gentle shepheards, I hope you will not be displeased, though I presse into your company being not sent for, the rather because Petulca is one of my old acquaintance, and therefore I could do no lesse then greet him, as I would have done ere this, if occasion had been altered. Petulca (who though he had made earnest enquiry what this Princesse was, had not yet learned that it was Brissil, sister to his dear Sybil) marvelling at the Ladies words, seeing he knew her not, or never had seen her to his knowledge, was so amazed, that he wist not what to say, which Philoreus marking, gave her this answer: The displeasure Madam that we conceive by your continuing is such, that we think our selves honoured with your presence, and therefore acknowledge our selves beholding unto you, in that you disdain not of the unworthy company of such simple shepheards as we be. As for the acquaintance which
you

Adventures in Love.

you say you have had with our friend Petulca, as we are altogether ignorant of, so doe we not envy at his luck in that so gracious a Princeesse as your self beareth a remembrance of him.

As Petulca thought to ask pardon for his unmindfulness, and to excuse the weakness of his memory in that he could not remember that he had in all his life time seen any Lady comparable to her for her beauty or estate, much less to have seen her, the Duchesse staied him saying. Tell Petulca thy company thinketh thee happy that I beare memory of thee; but I pray you unhappy may I be thought to be, seeing that they disdainest to know her, whom I thought you would not have forgotten so soone. Is this the memory you have of me, and my sister Sybil, whom you so dearly loved? Is this the remembrance you beare of cursed Malorena and dissembling Bergama, who for thy sake sought our ruine? Petulca amazed to hear her say this, and knowing her by her voyce to be the same Brifil that sojourned among the shepheards of his Countrey, at length burst out into these words, Ah gracious Princeesse, the Gods know that I have not forgotten neither you nor Periander, who under the name of Sybil, in the habit of a shepheard, bearing title to be your sister, hath caused my grief, and forced me to undertake this troublesome journey, intending never to return home till I have found him, and letting him know the Treason and malicious dealing of Malorena and Bergama, to exhorte him to raze out the false surmise and suspicion which he hath grounded in the bottome of his heart of your disloyalty. For seeing that for my sake he hath been so horribly abused and brought into that error; I will hazard my life to restore him unto his former estate againe, to the end that he may enjoy you, and your self to him. And marvel not Lady, that I knew not your person, though I will remember your acquaintance; for as the Sun is in respect of the least star of the sky, the rose in respect of the nettle, the juniper tree in respect of the thorn bush, and the Lordly Chrystal in respect of the base glasse, so is your Ladship now

The Troublesome and Hard

in respect of the time that we were feasted by the dissembling Traitors Bergama in her Arboz. And therefore seeing that I had not as yet understood (having enquired of the Lady Felicias Pymphs of your calling) any other thing of you but that you were a certain Princesse of Albion, and that we should shortly hear of the cause of your coming, and more largely know the course of your fortune; I hope your Grace will not think the worse of me, who have vowed my body and life to do service unto your loving Periander, what state or calling soever he be of. Thanks kind Petulca (quoth the Duchesse) and perswade thy self that I think no otherwise of thee then I did at any time. And to the end that thou mayst understand the truth and verity of all my troubles, and know what Periander is, and also what caused him to faine himself to be my sister, being attired in shepheards attire, I will briefly and truly rehearse unto thee in this good company of shepheards (so I be not troublesome unto them) the whole state of my fortune. But first I must intreat you to tell me how long you have been here, when you departed from the village, and what successe you have had in your journey.

Then may it please you to understand (quoth Petulca) that after the malicious traitresse Malorena had cast her self into the river to take penance for her heinous offence, by her own appointment, the whole Village was made acquainted with her villany, detesting her for her malice, and marvelling at Periander and your self for your perfect loves, in marvellous manner mourning for his departure and your mischance. Inso-much that the chiefeest of the village sent for me to understand the truth of the whole matter; which when I had declared, they took order with me that I should speak with you, and comfort you, letting you know what they had appointed to do in your behalf; for they intended to make enquiry through all the countrey after Periander, to the end that he might be informed of all that had hapned in the Village concerning malicious Malorena, and so be induced to return again unto you, knowing the sayings of Malorena to be false, and inten-

ted

Adventures in Love.

ted by her pestiferous brain. Whereupon I, most ready to do any thing that might redound to your content, betimes the next morning went to your lodging, but there I found you not, nor could learn of any one of your neighbours what was become of you: whereof how sorry I was, I leave to the Gods to witness, and not I only but the whole Village, most grievously lamented your sodain departure. At length I resolved not to rest in any place till I had found Periander, and let him know how he had been abused by Malorena, and how you were injured by him, in that he giving credit to such a malicious maid, left you to passe your life in such discontent and grief for his cause. To the end that if Fortune had been so forward as to deprive him of your company for ever, by some sinister hap yet he should know how faithfully you loved him, seeing that your loyalty was knowne unto the whole Countrey. Whereupon I having first caused dissembling Bergama as an instrument and helping cause of this mischief, to be banished until such time as Periander and you were together and consented to have her released from exile, I betook myself to my journey, and having travelled two dayes and two nights, at last I arrived in a Country house, where I was very courteously used by a certain Shepheard, who took pleasure to talk with me concerning the cause of my coming, for that he had himself not passing eight year since, almost coursed over the world to seek his wife, which was carried away upon a certain time by a Duke that riding that way, caused his men to take her with them, he being abroad in the field. And that after he had taken so much paines, it was his luck at length to come to the Temple of Diana, where the Lady Felicia dwelleth, who helped him to his wife again. Wherefore the Shepheard having entertained and feasted me very courteously and bountifully, set me into a way which directly brought me to this place assuring me that I should of this Lady be informed of all matters concerning those that I sought for; as in truth I have found his words not disagreeing unto verity; For being arrived here two dayes since, the Lady welcomed

The Troublesome and Hard

me not as a simple Shepheard, but rather like some worthy person of high estate (which I perceiue she did in respect of your excellency and not of my desert) and willing me to stay in her Palace till such time as she might learn news concerning the cause of my comming, promised me that I should not stay in vaine, which I haue tried to be so, seeing that you are so happily arrived to this place, as I hope also by the fauour of the Gods, and the help of sage Felicia, to see Periander, if not here, yet in some other place.

Thus Madame haue you heard what is passed sithence the time that I saw you last, now it remaineth that it may please you to accomplish your promise. And so I wil (quoth the Duches; wherewith she began to declare the whole estate of her life to Petulca, and the rest of the company. Where we will leave her discursing of all such matters as befoze haue been declared, and return to Periander.

CHAP. XXII.

How *Periander* met with *Pharelus*, and how *Pharelus* declared to *Periander* what hapned in the Court of *Albion* since the departure of *Duches Brisil*.



Periander after he was departed from the Village where he left *Brisil*, within one dayes trauel reached into a Wood, wherein after he had strayed up and down for the space of six or seven houres in the night, could not finde any path to lead him out of the same desert place.

Insomuch that being weary of trauel, he was forced to lie on the ground among the wild furzen bushes and thornes to rest himself, where he slept till morning, at which time awaking out of his sleep, he saw a certain *Albion* Knight stand before him, whom he knew very well, for he was his fathers Master, and was called *Sir Pharelus*; whereat *Periander* was so ama-

zed,

Adventures in Love.

zed that he could not tell what had befallen him; but the Knight spake presently in this manner.

Fair Shepheard or Nymph (for Perander had his womans attire yet) whatsoever thou be, be not displeased that I have emboldned my self to presse so near the place where you slept, for seeing that I was loth to wake you out of your sound sleep and wished to speak with you, I thought best to stay till you awaked of your owne accord; therefore seeing you have given over your sleep, I beseech you to shew me what way I may take to get out of this huge wood in which I have soze against my will remained thzee dayes, not finding any way that leadeth out of the same. Perander glad that Sir Pharelus knew him not gave him this answer: Sir Knight, I have no reason to be displeased at you, seeing that I my self would in the like case have used as much boldnesse; I am no Nymph, yet if I could pleasure you and satisfie your desire, I would the willinger do it, considering that I would think my self beholding to him that would shew us the way out of this Wood; For yesterday about the decline of the Sun, did I first enter into it having travelled this way never before; and seeing I could not finde the way out again, having lost my path, the wearisomnesse of my journey forced me to take my rest. But pray you Sir (if I may be so bold) what luck hath brought you hither, for I perceibe by the strangeness of your apparel, that you are of some countrey afar off, seeing that no Gentlemen hereabout are cloathed after such a fashion. In truth (quoth Pharelus) it was ill luck brought me hither fair shepherdesse, for you shall know that I am a Brittain, born in the Ile of Albion, and left my Countrey by the command of our King who being informed by Letters from the King of Spain, that his son the young Prince of Albion was broken out of prison, and fled (for he was imprisoned in Sivil by his fathers command) sent me into Spain, to enquire after him, and not to return till I had heard of him. But when I was arrived in Spain, I heard that the King of Spaines daughter Florena went with him, or after him, but no man could tell me whether she

The Troublesome and Hard

were by him, or had not yet found him, or what way he was gone. Thus I have travelled up and down Spain, and have not as yet discovered any more news of him. In truth (quoth Perander) I heard great talk in our village, of the Kings daughter Florena, how she was conveyed out of the Court by another Kings son (I know not of what Countrey) that was imprisoned as you say by his own fathers command, because he would be married to a young Duchesse whom the King himself would have to his wife. True (quoth Phareus) but the Duchesse about three or four days before the appointed Wedding day, secretly fled out of the country no man knoweth whither; which the King took so grievously, that partly for danger & partly for grief, he kept his chamber six weeks, at the end of which time he received letters from the K. of Spain, in which he understood of his sons flight, which news almost set him besides his wits; for he had purposed to send Embassadors to Spain for his son, and to proclaim the Duchesse that was fled, Queen of England; and wife to his son Perander, unto whom he intended to resign the title of the Crown, and to marry him to the aforesaid Duchesse, with whom he was promised many years before. Therefore seeing that Fortune so crossed him, fell into a grievous and dangerous disease, insomuch that we doubted of his recovery. But after he had kept his bed one fortnight, by the singular skill and industry of the Physicians he began to mend; and calling me one morning to his beds side, uttered these words unto me. Ah Phareus, thou seest how piteously your King hath been used both by Fortune and Heaven; for the Gods intending to revenge my unnatural cruelty and barbarous tyranny against mine own son though I repented, yet would both bar me from my desire, and punish my offence. But now, as I feel by the alteration of my weaknesse, that they have slackened their vengeance, and pittie my case, so I hope Fortune will in like manner become more favourable than hitherto she hath been. You know how the Duchesse Brühl is fled, and no news can be heard what is become of the poor Lady. In like manner now
is

Adventures in Love.

is Periander also broken out of prison, and as a banished man runneth astray, perhaps suffering a thousand miseries and all for fear lest he should fall into my hands, where alas I would rather ask him forgiveness, then any way prejudice him seeing he hath no way offended me, but I greatly injured him. And now for as much as the hold of my life consisteth in the hope which I have to see both Periander and Brisil here in my Court; I have caused thee to come hither, to declare my mind unto thee concerning this matter, wherein I will employ thy service, seeing I have found thee faithful and loyall in all matters which I ever committed to thy trust, not doubting but that I shall finde thee as ready now to do me pleasure and acquite my self of your duty, as I have been at other times. My pleasure is that thou make a voyage into Spain, and passe over all that country to see whether you can hear of my son Periander to the end, that if you find him you may let him know how earnestly I wish to see him, that he may come hither, and receive the Crown of the Realme. And if it chance Dushesse Brisil be in those parts (for it may be she is with him or in travel to seek him) insomuch that you meet with her or hear of her. I would have order taken, that she notwithstanding that Periander be not yet found, might return to the Court to be crowned Queen, seeing that the Crown by the law of the Realme apperteineth unto her after my death, being betrothed to my son if he marry no other, as I know he will not. I will send others to other Countries you shall onely seek them in Spain. I pray you to do all the diligence you can and to behave your self herein according to the opinion I bear of you. And for your reward if you find either of them I will promise you lesse then I wil perform. And especially this I will say before hand, that he that findeth and bringeth Periander and Brisil both, as soon as they arrive at the Court, I will give him the isle Mon to be his and his heirs for ever; and he that findeth either Periander or Brisil, I will give him the government of West Albion. But as for you Pharelus, you shall receive greater benefits

The Troublesome and Hard

at my hands if the Gods will favour your journey, yet what luck soever you have, I will not be unmindful of your labour and readinesse.

Therewith the King weary by reason of his sicknesse, and scarce able to speak more, ceased, and I thanking his Majesty for his singular favour towards me, vowed to do whatsoever lay in me to the uttermost of my power, partly for my duty towards him and partly for the love I bear the young Prince. Inasmuch that after we had fully concluded the matter, I departed from Albion the next day with twelve men, which I have all sent to sundry places of this country, appointing them to meet all at the famous City Leon situated along the River Eyla, as the first day after to morrow at which time I mean to be there by the help of the Gods, to know what tidings they can bring me. Verily sir Knight (quoth Periander) the Kings son would wish to meet with you, if he knew the good tidings you bring him; I am grieved my selfe to heare that such great persons are subject to so much aduersity. But I pray fair shepheard (quoth Pharelus) seeing you say you have heard talk of him in your Village, to tell me where the same village is, and how it is called; for if I thought I might there hear any thing of him, I would take my journey that way. More then I have said (quoth Periander) shall you not heare there I promise you, and therfore seeing it is out of your way, take not the pains. And as they were thus talking together, they espied an old man wandring through the wood so far from them that they could scarce see him by reason of the thicknesse of the bushes and small trees that grew in the wood. But calling unto him, he fearing lest they had meant to do him some harm, began to run away as fast as his old leggs could carry him. But Pharelus with all celerity followed him so long till he overtook him at last at the wood end, having run a whole hour before he could come to him, the old fellow so bestrid his stumps, and seeing he could not outrun him, he fell downe on his knees and asked for mercy, making a large apologic that he was a poore old man and had a wife and childzen to keep
and

Adventures in Love.

and many good moorowes, fearing that he should have been robbed by Pharelus, which he perceiving, could not but laugh to see the old man so timorous; and therefore said, Alack good Father, fear not, for though I perceive by thy fearfulness that thou art well provided of money, yet I called thee not for thy wealth, but for thy counsell, for I have been here in this Wood these three dayes and more, and cannot find any path to lead me out of the same. And though I perceive that by following thee I have attained to that which I wished for, seeing I am here at the wood end, yet I thought good to deliver thee out of the opinion which thou conceivest of me, who wish thee no harme: Nevertheless, seeing I do not well know where I am, thou shalt do me a pleasure to tell me what way I may best take towards the famous City Leon. Ah good Gentleman (answered the old fellow) the cause that I ran from you, was not for fear to loose any treasure, for I have none; but I heard that there was a poore man slain about fife or six weeks ago in this wood, and seeing I knew you not, I hope you will not think the worse of me though I was afraid of you. As concerning your request, know, that I dwell in the same City you enquire for, and if you daine to travel in the company of such an humble person as my self, by the help of the Gods I will lead you thither before three dayes come to an end. Willingly (quoth Pharelus) and I thank thee for thy courteous offer, but there is a young Shepherdesse that followed me as I ran after thee, of whom I asked the way, and alas she know it as little as I, and I would be sorry that we should leave her behind us; and therefore I pray thee to stay here a little, and I will see whether I can eiepy her coming. But if you be wise (quoth the old man) go not in too deep, lest you lose your way again, it were best for you to call unto her as loud as you can, or to whistle, for if she hear you she will come, and if she be out of hearing, you may chance to seek after her as long as you have already been in the wood. Pharelus followed his counsell, and whooped unto her as loud as he might, and seeing that she came not,
after

The Troublesome and Hard

after he had remained there for the space of two hours, the old man being very hasty to go on his journey, he would not stay behind, and omit that opportunity, though loth, yet forced to leave the shepherds, he went with the old man. Periander on the other side, who for his woman-like shepherd attire, could not follow Pharelus when he ran after the old man, (for his long coat catched by the thornes and brambles) and having lost the sight of Pharelus, went quite another way; so that it was no marvel that he heard not Pharelus call unto him; for he went quite contrary from the path which Pharelus took after the old man, and came out at the other end of the wood, where seeing himself out of the troublesome Forrest, was grieved that he had lost Pharelus in that sort, before he had resolved whether he would reveale himself unto him or no, but yet remembering that Pharelus said he meant to be at Leon within six days, he was the gladder, seeing wher he knew to find him, if he concluded to return with him to Albion; Insomuch that sitting down on a bank by the wood side, began in this manner.

Ah unfortunate Periander, now mayst thou well perceive that Fortune hath sworn to be thy enemy for ever. For hath she not first saborned the Traytor Masticourt to work thy misery, and so laid the foundation of all thy troubles? He being cut off and his villany detected; hath she not armed thy olone natural Father against thee and stirred him up to wrong thee of thy right? And now the Gods being incensed and provoked to wrath by such impiety, have by their vengeance moved him to repent? Hath she not battered the Fort which I ne'r thought she should have been able to incorporate? Ah Brasil, Brasil! never did I think that Fortune should have triumphed of her victories in making conquest of the nearest thing that touched my heart, and that she should have braved me with the trophies of thy disloyalty. Ah how often was I wont to say unto Fortune, when she threatened me to deprive me of honour, living, renown, yea life and all, that none of all that was mine, thinking that I might claime nothing properly to be mine,
but

Adventures in Love.

lost thy love, faith, and loyalty; not caring to lose the whole world so I might enjoy thee, whom I thought that neither alteration of time, nor distance of place, nor mutation of manners nor change of estate, nor any thing whatsoever either hell or fortune might procure, could have withdrawn from Periander. In her was my mind fixed, my hope planted, and all my confidence seated; seeing therefore that fortune hath been able to make conquest of her, I am constrained to confesse and acknowledge that she can do what she will, and that we may not resist her pleasure.

Insomuch that I strike against the stream, and cast stones against the wind, in opposing my self against fortune seeing she hath vowed my utter ruins, and will bring her will to passe. The ashes of the old Phoenix breedeth the new, and with me the end of one misfortune is the beginning of another. How can I then hope ever to enjoy content, seeing I never had happy hour? if fortune looketh on me she lowbeth, if she turneth her face from me, she threatneth me, if she remember me she is enraged at me, and if she smileth, she flattereth: whether dissembling to weake her anger and ingraft her spight against me whom she could never brook. Yet Periander how canst thou so greatly complain of her, seeing that she so favoureth thee, that thy father, who was thy foe, is now become thy friend; thou that wert but a kings son, art now when thou wilt a king; and where thou didst live in imprisonment, in exile, and misery, maist now live in Court, in liberty, and in all the pleasure of the world? No, no, fond fool, fortune doth not this, but the just Gods, and if she be any cause of it she doth it onely thereby to entice me to become as disloyal as Brisil, and so wholly to vanquish and overcome me. But no, though I have acknowledged her to be never so puissant, yet she shall not make conquest of my fidelity, nor brag of my disloyalty, seeing, I will not, nor may give over the love of Brisil; and though she neglect and hate me, yet will I love and honour her till death.

After Periander had thus lamented the losse of the love of

The Troublesome and Hard

Brifil, he determined to go to the City Leon to meet with Sir Pharelus, and with him to return to Albion, intending to live there and enjoy his Fathers Crown; but never to love any but Brifil, or to knit himselfe in marriage to any other. And resolved to take his journey by the same village where he left Brifil, meaning to speak with Malorena, and to leave a Letter with her for Brifil, as he had done before: in which Letter he purposed to let Brifil know of all that which he had learned of Pharelus, whom he found and lost in the wood. He intended also to write a Letter to Petulca, and to let him know as much, protesting that if hee would come into Albion when hee were Crowned, he would give him the Dukedome pertaining unto Brifil in marriage with her, and doe him all the honour that a Monarch might do to any of his Peers, seeing that Brifil made such account of him. In this mind Periander returned secretly unto the village where he had sojourned with Brifil, and changing his attire, apparelled himselfe in mans cloathes, according to his sex and nature. And being come to the village he took his lodging in a Shepherds house, where he thought he was least of all known. When he had entred into the house, and caused supper to be made ready, he asked one of the Shepherds daughters, whether they knew not a certain Shepherdesse called Malorena, (for he thought to have spoken with her, and to know of her how Petulca and Brifil were moved at his departure, & to leave the Letters which he purposed to write, with her, to deliver them to Brifil and Petulca) wherewith they were halfe angry thinking he did it to have occasion to speak ill of the maids and shepherds of their country, and therefore gave him this answer. We knew her, but too well, and if we thought you were one of her favourites, you should have but had lodging here. Pardon me (saie shepherds, replied Periander) if I offend against my knowledg, for the cause that I ask for her, is that I am her cousin, & have not seen her this great while: I as yet have never heard any ill of her, nor ever knew any thing by her, but that she behaved her self as a maid of her calling ought to do. Thereby (quoth the shepherds wife) we perceive

Adventures in Love.

perceives thee to be but a stranger here, and therefore to be excused; for as you say, she was famed for one of the most modest maids of the whole country, but now of late she hath committed great villany against two of the loyallest lovers that ever the world harboured. And thus the good wife declared the sum of the whole matter unto Periander, how all things were passed: which so altered his affections, that all they that were present could perceive that he was moved thereby. Yet least he should bewray who he was, forced himself as much as he could to abstain from sighing or weeping til he was alone, at which time he poured forth whole floods of tears out of his eyes, for grief that he had shamefully suffered himself to be deluded by Malorena, and thereby brought himself into all these miseries, where otherwise he should have been the happiest man that lived. Nevertheless when he had heard what moan Brsil had made for his sudden departure, and how that she was gone to seek him he was joyfull and glad, accounting more of her Love and loyalty then all other things whatsoever. Thus Periander both sorry and glad, wist not what he might best do, to seek for Brsil, or to go to Leon first, and speak with Pharelus. But considering, that it were a most uncertain voyage, and doubtfull labour to stray after her, he concluded to goe to Pharelus first, and with all speede to returne to Albion, where after he were crowned King, he doubted not, but that she would come unto him, as soon as she should be informed thereof. Besides, he purposed to send so many to enquire after her, that in despite of Fortune, he should hear of her, or she of him, especially seeing she sought for him, which was the chiefest point that encouraged Periander.

He therefore having his head full of Bees, and building castles in the aire, slept a little that night, and rising betimes in the morning, took leave of the shepheard, paying and discharging that which could be asked for his lodging and entertainment departed towards the City Leon, where he arrived two days after Pharelus.

The Troublesome and Hard

CHAP. XXIII.

How Perlander discovered himself to Pharelus, and departed with him towards Albion.



Perlander (though hee knew not where hee might find Pharelus, or how to inquire for him, yet hee) had such good luck and fortune, that walking in the Market-place, hee espied Pharelus talking with one of the men whom hee had appointed to meet him there: whereupon Perlander stepping to him, courteously saluted him, saying. Sir Knight, the cause of my comming unto you, being unknown is this. About two dayes ago, I met with a certain shepheardesse, who told me that she understood of you, that you sought for the King of Albions sonne that was imprisoned in Spain, and breaking forth ran away as some say with the Kings Daughter, though others rather think without her. And for as much as I have heard some certainty concerning this young Prince, where he is, & other matters touching a certain Dutchess that should be his wife or alliance, I thought good to let you know so much as I have heard. But if it will please you to go with me half a mile without the City, I will lead you into a shepheards house, where I doubt not but you shall understand as much as shall content you, and serve to bring you unto the thing you most wish for. Sir Pharelus hearing this young man (as little thinking that he should be Perlander, as he did when he met him in the wood in womans apparel) thanked him with a most pleasant countenance, rejoycing extremely for the hope hee had to find Perlander; and presently without returning to his lodging, hee went with him out of the City towards the place he spake of. Perlander seeing Sir Pharelus so merry for the news he had brought him, and so ready to goe with him, conceived great joy that he had so friend.

Adventures in Love.

ly a subiect; and leading him out of the City, when he came in to a close something far from any house, where he thought he might speak safely and not be heard or seen of any man but sir Pharelus who was onely by him: (for he had left his man in the market-place of the City, there to expect the coming of others that he looked for) he thought good to reveal unto sir Pharelus who he was, and therefore said thus, Pharelus we are now come far enough, I mean to go no further, and I thank thee that thou hast done so much for me as to come thus far with me, when I am King of Albion, I will do more for thee. Pharelus amazed at these words wist not what answer to give him, and although at the first he thought he had mocked with him, saying, that he thanked him for coming so far with him, yet when he heard him speak of his being King of Albion, perceived that it was Periander himself, for joy whereof, he could scarce speak, but falling down on his knees craved pardon of Periander for his ill remembrance. But Periander embracing him, took him up by the hand, and thanked him for his loyal service, saying that he was so mindful of him that he should be beholding unto him for ever. For (quoth he) how may I find fault with thy remembrance Pharelus, seeing thou daily takest such care about me, and sufferest so much toil to seek me? As for the outward remembrance, which consisteth onely in the favour and colour of the face, seeing the same is by continuance of time changed and altered, it is a hard matter to bear memory thereof, especially when it is estranged with unacquainted and strange attire. Doubtless no doubt Pharelus, but you that think on me dayly would have known me, not onely when I came to you in the market-place of this city Leon, but also when you feared to wake me in the wood, where we were so strangely separated one from the other, I know not by what mischance, but that (the Gods be thanked it happened greatly to my comfort,

Herewith Periander informed Pharelus of all whatsoever had hapned unto him, since his departure from Albion, and also of Britals coming unto him in the prison, her departure

The Troublesome and Hard

with him, their abode, and manner of abode among the shep-
heards: and lastly of Brisils last departure, greatly lamenting
her absence, making great sorrow for her, that she now went
astray up and down through the unknown and solitary places
of that desert part of Spain to seek him. Pharelus glad to under-
stand the whole matter, though grievously sorry for the Dut-
ches Brisils mishap, comforted Periander by all the means he
could, hoping by that they had been in Albion but a moneth or
twain, they should hear of her.

When Periander and Pharelus had a long time talked of all
matters concerning their return to Albion, they went back to
the City again, where they met with those whom Pharelus ex-
pected that day: who being come according to his appointmēt,
each told as much as he had heard concerning Periander, which
was but little: nevertheless he thanked them all for their di-
ligence and industry, telling them that hee had better newes
himself, and such newes that he minded to return into Albion,
where he doubted not, but that he should find Periander, if the
Gods would be so favourable as he hoped; but would leave
them to inquire and seek for the Dutchess Brisil, who was some-
where in that part of Spain where they were. The men glad to
see their Master so frelick and merry for the good news which
he had heard, promised that they would do as much as lay in
their power, according to their duty, and as they had already
done. But marbelling what young man he was that stood by
their master (for they had never seen Periander to their know-
ledge) asked their master, whether that young man had brought
him those happy tidings? Pharelus unwilling that they should
know that he was Periander, told them that he was so, and that
he would lead him into Albion with him, to the end that if his
newes were true, he might reward him accordingly as he de-
served.

But Pharelus speedily appointing them what way each
should take, willed them to make diligent search for her, assu-
ring them, that she was in those parts, and that the same young
man that was by him had seen her not long before, being ap-
parelled

Adventures in Love.

paralleled like a shepherd and countrey maid. Besides he charged them to tell her if they met her, what was passed in the Court of Albion befoze their departure, and that sithence she saw Periander last, that he hath been at the village where he left her, and there been informed of the deceitfulness of Bergama, of her own faithfulness and loyalty, and of all other matters concerning the traitresse Malorena; and that he is either in Albion, or shortly shall be, where he will expect her coming. Herewith Pharelus dispatched them all, and leaving them each one to look to his charge, presently repaired to his lodging with Periander, where they refreshed themselves being both hungry and weary. Their repast being taken, they took directions for their readiest way towards the Haven of Lisbon, intending there to take ship. And so departing from Leon, they travelled along the river Ezla, leaving the village where Periander had sojourned with Brisfil on the left hand, where we will leave them going on their journey, and return to Brisfil, whom we left rehearsing the history of her life, to the shepherd Petulca and Philoreus, with the rest of their company.

CHAP. XXIII.

How the Aragonians were discomfited by the Castilians: and the King of Castile carried away *Philoreus* his mother.



When Brisfil had ended her tragedy, she said. Thus shepherds have you heard the whole estate of my life, who I am, of whence, and of what fortune. And soasmuch as it is not yet near supper time, seeing we are so well met, I pray you Philoreus (for so I hear you named) bein to make us partakers of your fortune, that as I have willingly made you acquainted with mine, so you will let us know what hap you have had, and what event hath made you resort to the Lady Felicia. For by reason that I heard something concerning

The Troublesome and Hard

concerning your self, of the nymph Arethee (who before I entered into the Wallace) being by me and the rest of my company asked what shepheards of account were in the Lady Felicias Court, named you among the rest, I am touched with an earnest desire to know the course of your life, Philoreus answered.

Most gracious Lady if I should do lesse then you demand, (saying you in y^e command) I might worthily be accounted both unmindefull and ungratefull. If therefore it will please you to give attention to my speech, I will as briefly as I may (not to be tedious unto you) unfold the occasion of my travel, and acquaint you with the strange effects of my fortune even from my childhood.

Brissil seeing Philoreus addresse himself to tell histale, winked unto Marcelio and Ilmenia, who walked, hee with his Alcida, and she with her Lexander, and they being come unto her, she told them of Philoreus his intent, which they knowing, sat down by Brissil and Petalica, with the other shepheards, making silence, lest they should interrupt Philoreus his purpose who began in this manner to satisfie their expectation.

I was bozn in a little village called Yervedra in the Kingdome of Aragon; my parents were poore and of base lineage, and lead their libes altogether in the Country, their name or kindred being of no honour or fame for nobility of discent though they were known and spoken of in places farre from them, through the whole Kingdome of Aragon for their vertue and honesty. As fortune had enriched them with many fair possessions, so nature had beautified their persons with comeliness, and the Gods indued their minds with the heavenly influence of wisdome, liberallity, modesty, gentleness, chastity, and many other vertuous qualities, which made them famous above all their neighbours, But Fortune who continually envieth the hap of those that be most addicted to pitty, either willing to try the perfection of their vertuous constitution, or rather intending to overthrow their honest disposition

Adventures in Love.

fitton, began to lowze and frozon on the good and luckie estate in which my father and mother libed, habing steeze of wealth, and no other charge but me: I being about two or thre years of age. For it happened that occasion of Wars and Discord growing betwene the Kings of Aragon and Castile, both their Armies were encamped by our village, insomuch that my father and most of his Neighbours, to avoide the losse they were like to sustain by the incursion of their enemies, thought best to leave their country habitation til the times changed, and to sojourn in some of the next Cities until the wars were ended. To bring which thing to passe, my father speedily travelled towards the City Targonna, there to provide some house for his wife and him. there to expect the end of the present troubles, intending, if he could find any convenient place for his purpose, to return home and fetch my mother and me with the rest of the family. But within one day after his departure, it happened, that the two armies buckled together, and the enemy becoming victorious, pursued our King that fled with all his Nobility through our Village, to save himself in the aforesaid City of Targonna, seeing his Campe was discomfited, his chiefeest Captains slain and all his Souldiers chased by the enemy, and put to their shifts, having more hope in their heels then in their hands, insomuch that the whole Army of the K. of Castile swarming about our Village as a company of Bees, pillaged and spoiled all the houses and farms taking the chiefeest farmers and husbandmen for their prisoners, setting them each one at such a rate or sum of money for their ransome, as they thought them able to pay, according to the substance and wealth which they judged them to have.

Amongst the rest, one of their Captains entering into our house, and asking for my father, the maids answered, that hee was in the City: but he not beleebing them, ran into all corners of the house, to see whether he were not hidden in some secret place: and as he ranged up & down through all the chambers, at length he found my mother lying under one of the peardes beds, and pulling her out by the hand, when he saw the

The Troublesome and Hard

decent proportion of her body, the comelinesse of her face, and gravity of her countenance, he was on the suddain so swayed in the net of fantasie, that he felt himself not a conquerour, but conquered; and spake unto her in this order. Beautifull Matron (for I perceiue you are the Mistresse of this household) the pleasant weapons wherewith you fight hath given me such a soothing wound, that although it hath penetrated the very depth of my heart, and yielded me thy captive whereas I was in the number of those that this day boast of victorie, yet I am forced to confesse, that fortune hath not a little favoured me, in that it was my hap to be overcome by so sweet an enemy as your self. Fear not therefore sweet, for I am not come hither to do thee or thy family any wrong, but to do thee pleasure and service. Wherewith he espying his souldiers busie with raping and pilfering, pocketing, and bagging up such things as they liked best, commanded them to cease, and to seek their booty elsewhere; and appointing some of them to free the house from the incursions of other captains and souldiers, he returned unto my mother, who could not sufficiently lament our misfortune, that we were not by my father in the City, not regarding the losse of all her goods, but the danger unto which her honesty was exposed. The Captain therefore perceiuing her so greeued, began again in this sort to comfort her. Brave dame, I beseech you do not afflict your self, seeing you have no cause, for where you see among your neighbours not one escape the fury of the souldier, who spoileth them of all the substance, of their jewels, of their cattell, of their beasts, of their dearest household stuff, burneth their houses, and taketh the Matrons prisoners, and plagueth them with all kind of warlike injury; you contrarily have not so much as a broom-staff removed out of your house. And although your husband were here, as it seemeth he is not, yet should he not have one hair of his head impaired. For whatsoever I promise, I swear unto you by the faith of a Gentleman and souldier, that I will perform no lesse. And therefore I pray you cease from weeping, and wash not your cheeks with your tears, bath
not

Adventures in Love.

not your self in water which is procured with so much grief.

All this could not perswade my wofull mother to give over her sorrow, or to assuage her grief; for she well knew that when the Syrens sing most sweetly, they intend most harm; that when the Fowler whistleth most pleasantly, he wisheth the birds most misery; and that she for never praised the hens, but when he aimed at the cock, and so did she more then misdoubt that these words of the captain tended to no other purpose but to crop the bloom of her Honesty, and to become Lord of her Beauty.

The consideration of this so overwhelmed her with exceeding sorrow, that she ceased not from weeping for all the Captains prattle, nor would shee give him one word in answer to his sayings. Nevertheless he bore her forwardnesse so patiently, that he changed not his former tune, but rather continued in his sweet and mild speeches, trying by all means he could to assuage her dolour, and to provoke her to accept of his service and friendship, using her so courteously, that he seemed rather to be some especial friend, then destroying enemy. For though my mother well marked the cause which moved him to use such favourable enmitie, and espied that he was caught in the snare of her beauty yet could she not sufficiently wonder at his modesty, wherewith he sought to cover and cloak his disease; for though he revealed it unto her at the first, yet he did not so much as offer her the least disgrace in the world, neither by word nor deed.

In the mean while the King of Castile (who in proper person had pursued his enemy our King, who having reached to the Walls of the City, was freed by the help of the Cannon, which forbade the enemy to approach near) returning againe through our village, being weary, and seeing no house that liked him so well as ours (for the most part of our neighbours houses were burned) lighted from off his horse, and entred into the Hall, where he found the Captain by my mother, who wept so bitterly, that it might have moved any heart to compassion. But the King wondering to see her in such a wofull

The Troublesome and Hard

ease, and yet marked that her house was so firm and all things in as good order as if no souldiers had been near it, asked the Captain what y^e woman ailed. A sozry of y^e Kings coming, yet seeing there was no remedy with it chanced so, made this answer: **D**read Soberaign (qd. he) it was my hap to light on this house, where at my entrie, I found this Matron being mistress of this family, and beholding her beauty and modest plight, I forced my self to give over the rigorous manner of war, and to use her according to her deserts, whose gravity and comely grace hath privileged her from the fury of my souldiers, insomuch that they have not by mee bene allowed to do her the least danger that may be. Yet notwithstanding doth she weep and make such grief as if she were worse used then all the rest of her neighbours, that have not onely lost their goods but also their husbands and children, yea and their honesty being violated and ravished by the common mercenary souldiers. Therefore mighty conquerour, what she ayleth or what cause she hath to take on in this manner, it passeth my divination to conjecture. **W**hy then (quoth the King) I pray thee yeeld over thy captive unto me, and I will give thee two of y^e chiefest noblemen captives of the K. of Aragon, that I have taken in this flight, in lieu of her: and let me try whether I cannot find better means to steepe her grief and procure her solace then thou hast don. As they were busie about changing of captives, news was brought y^e the enemy flocked out of the City being an huge and mighty company, marching toward the place where he was; whereat the King amazed, caused the chiefest Marshal of his army to call up the souldiers and to place them in battell aray to withstand their enemy, but all in vain; for the souldiers strayed so wide to seek their bootie, and to benefit themselves with the spoil, that if they had not in time plaid scampado, they had been every man slain. Which the King perceiving, mounting on his Steed, and loth to leave his new captive behind him, caused my mother to be set behind one of his Noblemen. and so they posted away, where I poor wretch bawled as children of that age I then

Adventures in Love.

then was in, being about four years old, are accustomed to do when they be separated from their mother. My father desirous to know how we fared in the midst of the enemy, snatched occasion by the fore-head and went forth of Targenna with them that pursued the enemy, and comming home, marvelled to see the house in so good estate; but missing my mother, asked what was become of her, which he soon knew by my crying, who said my mother was carried away by the Souldiers. Whereat he was so moved, as you may well consider how any man might be cheared in such a case, and therefore I will not waste the time in declaring what exceeding sorrow my father made for the absence of his wife, resolving to hazard his life to have her again.

But alas, the King of Castile being fled to a Castle which he had won not passing four or five days before, saved himself within the walls of the same, from the fury of his enemy that ceased not to pursue him; and so my father saw no way to obtain his desire, seeing my mother was within the aforesaid Castle, which was so strong that it could not be easily incorporated by our men, who assailed it fiercely but to no purpose: for the souldiers that were scattered in the flight, met together about a league from the Castle, and having rallied themselves, in the night time brake into our camp, making great slaughter among our men, and although they could not discomfit our men, yet they got within the walls of the Castle, and were joyned to the rest of their company, in so much that our men had no hope to win the Castle, and so departed towards the City, which my father took very heabily, seeing he was cut from his wife; and so he returned home very mournfully, imagining & inventing how he might have my mother again, & redẽm her from captivity, though it should have cost him all whatsoever he might make with the sale of his goods. Yet his hope was but smal to get her again for any price, seeing the maids & servants of the house had told him y she was carried away by the Kings command, and declared unto him how all things were passed, touching the friendly hostility of the Captain, the Kings de-

mand

The Troublesome and Hard

mand, the changing of captives, and all other things that concerned the carrying away of their mistress.

In the mean time my mother, whom the King of Castile solicited to dishonesty, was most miserably tormented and grieved, that her fortune was so adverse, that she was in the hands of him that might force her to do that which he pleased, though the laws of God, nature, and the country, were contrary unto it. But she purposed rather to die, then to consent to his lewd will, and to esteem more of her chastity, then his favour, though she were but a mean person, and he a King; loth to change her honesty for his Kingdome.

CHAP. XXV.

How the mother of *Philoreus* to avoid the lust of the King of Castile, secretly fled out of the Castle with the Captain; and how, supposing her former husband to be dead, she married him, and had by him a Son named also *Philoreus*.



He foresaid Captain perceiving that my mother was so grievously vexed with sorrow for her captivity, came unto her as privately as he might, and comforted her as much as he could, promising that if she would trust him, he would release her from her imprisonment, and bring her home to her house or where she pleased. This, although it did not a little moderate my mothers grief, yet she feared least she should not so much be delivered out of her miserie, as change the kind of her calamity, and shunning one gulph, she misdoubted to fall into another, according to the saying,

Incidit in Syllam cupiens vitare Charibdim, which caused her to be very doubtful in deliberation, not knowing what she might best do in that great perplexity. Nevertheless considering that the worst that might happen was, that she should be abused but by a Captain, where otherwise she should remain
subject

Advent ures in Love.

subject to the lust and riot of a King, making case of the vice, and not regarding the persons, she resolved to follow the Captains counsell, thinking that it might as well prove for her benefit as contrarily, where if she remained with the King she could not hope for amendment, seeing lust cannot be quenched by virtue, but rather inflamed and stirred up to further wickednesse. The Captain hearing her willing to use his help, told her that the King intended the next day after to ride to another Castle, where he purposed to muster his army, and to besiege the City Targonna, but meant to let him be as chief governour of the Castle: therefore he willed her to feign that she was extreemly sick, and to yeld the King a pleasant countenance at his departure, beseeching him to leave her there to rest, seeing she was ill at ease, & promising him that she would be ready, her health recovered, to do his Majestie any pleasure and service it might please him to command her. And then (quoth the Captain) if you do but obtain so much of him, let me al one for the rest.

She thinking him for his great deserts towards her, promised to use the matter so, that shee doubted not but to obtaine so much of the King: as to be short, she did. For the King marched with his bands, and left her to the keeping of this Captain, who being appointed Gouverneur of the Castle that night came unto my mother, and brought her one of his lutes of apparel, willing her secretly to put it on her, and to come to his chamber as soon as she was ready: which she did, and was no sooner come, but hee commanded the Watch to let down the bridge, and open the gates, for that he minded himselfe, onely accompanied with one Gentleman, to make the scout watch, and to espie whether the enemy were about the Castle, or had sent any spies to learn whether the King were there, or to know what they went about.

The watch forced to obey their chief Gouverneur, although they thought it but little policy, notwithstanding that hee might be thought venturous, to undertake that Service which most private Souldiers seek to put by, they did as
their

The Troublesome and Hard

their Governor commanded, and let him go forth with his companion, whom they knew not.

The Captain and my mother being out of the Castle, hee swore there, that hee would for her sake never enter into the same again, or serve the King his Sovereign any longer, but after he had led her home to her husband, he would seek his fortune in some strange Countrey where he might be freed from the harm that might ensue by reason of the Kings anger and indignation against him, carrying my mother away from him. Which she wept marking bitterly, that so valiant a Captain, and worthy a Gentleman should be deprived of all his wealth and substance, yea of that great honour and credit which by his virtue and prowesse he had won among all his Country-men, both in the Court and in the Camp, for her sake. But he most kindly prayed her to content her self, and not to care for him; for so he might do her pleasure, and so she might by his means, enjoy her content and wished desire, he should be satisfied, seeing he desired nothing so much as her bliss, and protesting that his chiefest felicity consisted onely In her prosperity.

She grieved for nothing so much as that she wist not how she might worthily recompence his deserts, could not be pacified, but wept continually, not caring for her self, but sorrowing that the good and valiant Knight had abandoned all, for to restore her to her former liberty, and to free her from dishonour.

But by this they arrived at the village, where my father was not, nor any person in the world in our house; for my father thought not that he might safely stay in his own house, for fear least he should be watched for, and by the King of Castiles command, be slain by the enemy. But he had put away all his servants and taken me with him, insomuch that we were in a certain shepheards house something far from the village which was burned, where no man durst dwell. The Captain therefore and my mother, entering the house, and finding no man, marvelled greatly, and by my mothers intreaty, departed.

Adventures in Love.

ed thence towards the City Targonna, where she made great enquiry for my father and mee, but they could not hear of us. But you must note by the way, that the Captain had changed his apparel and put on a shepherds garment, and my mother likewise put off her mans weed, and attired self according to her sex. And within two or three days after they had been in city, they chanced to light on a certain shephard; whom my mother knew well, and who knew my parents as well as any of all our village. Of this shephard did my mother understand that the King of Castile returning to the castle where he had left her, and finding her absent, and the general Governor, whom he would have trusted with a greater charge, was so enraged, that he hanged the captain of the watch for letting him forth; and marching with his whole Army towards our village, he destroyed all that he met with and put all the country men that he could find to the edge of the sword, sparing neither man, woman, nor child. This shephard told my mother, that so much as he had seen my father and me in a little cottage adjoining to our village he thought certainly that we had not escaped the Kings fury, but that wee were both slain: which bad tidings so grieved my mother, that unlesse the good Knight had persevered in his comfortable consolations she had either died for sorrow, or ended her grief by finishing her life with her own hands.

On the other side my father, who by good fortune was forewarned of the Kings furious coming to the village, escaped the danger, which he was like to incur; but when he heard of the proclamation which was made throughout all the country by the Kings command, &c. That whosoever could bring him the head of the same Trumpet, which refusing to be his concubine, had by her dishonest enticements enchanted the heart of Don Alvares de Bazora, one of his chiefest captains in his wars (for so was the good captain called) and bewitched him to love her, & carry her from her husband, should have all the livings that belonged or appertained to the foresaid Don Alvares. I say, when my Father had heard this Proclamation, thinking

B b

that

The Troublesome and Hard

that my mother was guilty of the crime she was accused of, and supposing that she had changed her praised chastity into wantonnesse, he thought that she had allured the knight to lewdnesse, which so grieved him that after he had largely and lamentably complained of her disloyalty, he took me by the hand and departed out of Aragon presently travelling toward Italy, where in the Kingdome of Naples in a certain village called Cinqueni, he purposed to live the remnant of his life. In the mean time it chanced that the Kings of Aragon and Castile, seeing they could not by war becomre Lord the one over the other, they concluded a wished and durable peace among their countries, making a perpetuall league of friendship between the said Kingdomes of Aragon and Castile. Insomuch that the King of Castile, returned to his Country with his whole army; and in short space were the villages and towns that had been sacked and burned newly built up again and all the inhabitants of the country returned home to their houses. My mother therefore desirous to know whether my father was slain or no, returned to our village with the knight, to inquire for my father and me, but no man could tell her any news of us. Insomuch that she verily thought that he was dead, and I likewise, she lived in that state yet three or four moneths; which time being expired, the Captain made earnest sute unto her in reward of his service and faithfulness, seeing her husband was dead, to take him to her husband. Swearing and protesting that he would be as loyall unto her as any man in the world might be unto his wife. She acknowledging that he deserved more then he requested, yet loth so soon to marry again, did give him of as long as she could, till at length not able to gainsay his lawfull request, she married her self unto him, and to the end she might forget her former deceased husband, the better thinking it but meer trouble to be cumbered with the remembrance of her dead husband being remarried, she and her new husband went to some bordering town of Castile, where they remained four years, having a child the first year named Philoreus, at my mothers request, she being desirous

Adventures in Love.

sirous to have a new Philoreus, seeing she had lost the other. You must in like manner note, that the Captain sith the first hour that he departed out of the Castle with my mother, named himself as my father was called (to wit Coreandro) to the end that he might be unknown; which name he retained as long as he lived.

Thus they having long lived (as I said) four years in the borders of Castile, certain mutinies rising in the town of their abode, about the Strangers that lived in the same place, they left that town and went into Italy, thinking the further they went from Castile, the more they should free themselves from the danger that might ensue if they should be known. In this voyage my mother, either by the necessity of her destinies, or the labour of her troublesome journey, fell sick, and passed her fatal day in a certain village of Italy. Her husband the Captain, though he so impatiently took the death of his dear wife, for whom he had brought himself into all these troubles, that he cursed the Fates, and blasphemed the Gods for ending her life and not rather his own; yet after she was buried, he took his son and travelled on his journey, intending to passe over his life in solitary manner, admitting no occasion of joy or recreation. but onely such as he might enjoy by the company of his young sonne, whom nature had left him as a pledge of remembrance of her whom hee so dearly love; and it was his lucke to sojourne in the same village which my father and I dwelled in, being called Cinqueni, as I have before mentioned where this Captain with his young Philoreus, and my father with his also, remained a fortnight the one not knowing of the other.

This space of fourteen days being fullfilled, the King of Naples sent two thousand men to burn the same village and slay all the inhabitants thereof, for what reason I cannot now so well remember, and seeing it maketh not for my purpose, I will not stand upon it any longer, but let you know how that my father having had some foreintelligence of the Kings intent (as many more of our neighbours did, among whom I

The Troublesome and Hard

place the Captain, my mothers second husband) and therefore thought best to flie unto some other place: yet the Kings command being something hastily put in execution it hapned that my father with all the rest were so suddenly assaulted in the night time, & they were compelled to leap out of their beds in their shirts and take their flight, leaving all they had behind them: so that neither my father had leasure to take me with him, nor the Captain to save his Philoreus; yet was our luck such, that though no child escaped untimely death, yet we the one not knowing the other, found mercy at the souldiers hands that were sent to execute the Kings pleasure. For they taking pity on us, thought it was then a sacriledge to kill us that were so young, and by the disposition of our bodies seemed likely to prove comely men. In so much that we were both of us privileged from death and carried to the City of Naples, & by a certain Captain, whose hap it was to light on me, & the other Philoreus by a Sergeant, who seeing his father fled, ran towards him to bath his sword in the poor innocent child his blood, for spight that his father had by flight escaped his fury: & coming near him, hearing him cry, his choller turned into affection, and he so loved the child, being about three years and a half old, & he having neither wife nor child, intended to carry him to Naples, & bying him up as his own son. Thus we lived in Naples seven years & yet had no knowledg one of the other.

CHAP. XXVI.

How Philoreus the elder was brought to the Court by the King of Naples, who sent him Ambassador to the King of Persia.



I shall intreat you (most excellent Princeesse, and ye worthy Gentlemen and shepheards) to mark by the way, that as we were both alike in name, so wee were in like manner so like one the other in favour, in plight of the body, in colour of hair, and in voice, that it was impossible for any one by the judgement of the eye to discern the one

Adventures in Love.

one of us from the other, when I had attained the eighteenth year of my age, and the other Philorenius to the fifteenth year of his age; at which time hee was fully as tall as I, and in growth reached to the full proportion of length and thicknesse that I was of. The reason whereof was, that we both attained to our full bignesse at fourteene yeares of our age, in so much that when he reached to fourteen years, he was fully in bignesse equal to me.

This therefore being committed to memory, you shall know, that after I had dwelled thise years in Naples with the Captain who had brought me thither, it happened, that the same Captain marrying the daughter of a certain knight of great account, celebrated the feast of his wedding in very solemn manner. For not onely the chiefest Noble men of the country were invited thereto, but the King himself also, who disdained not in proper person to honour my Masters wedding day.

The ceremonies of the marriage being finished according to custome, in memory of Hymenæus, there was a most sumptuous banquet made ready for the King and those Nobles that were ministred. And it came to passe, that the King casting his eye upon me (who among other my fellows serbed my Masters guests at that feast) liked me so well, that he asked the Captain, whether I was of his affinity or kindred? The Captain said, that I was no kin unto him, but that he esteemed of me as of his son, in that a father can but give life to his son, as hee had done to me, shewing to the King where he had me, and how he brought me from the village Cinqueni. The King glad that he had saved such a proper lad from so unhappy and peremptory death, prayed my master to resign over the title he had to me unto him, promising y it should be both for his profit and my welfare. To make few words, of a Captains boy, I became a Kings Page; and that day taking leave of my old master, I went to the Court, where I so serbed the King, that I could not but please him; insomuch that his Majesty loved me as dearly as if I had been some Noble personage, suffering
ms.

The Troublesome and Hard

me to want nothing, allotting me no worse company then his own son, being about the same age that I was of, who affected me as if I had been his natural brother. Thus I lived in this happie estate about two years, till Fortune remembzing that she had brought me to the top of her wheel, began to threaten my haplesse downfall from all felicity, into the depth and profundity of aduersity, wishing me no better luck then my parents had had in their time, though she had at the first gladdened me with such good hap, thereby to make me the more impatient to suffer her crosse, and malicious entreatments in time to come. For it is a thing most certain, that among all men that are oppressed with aduersity, none can so ill away with their mishap, as they that befoze lived in great prosperity.

But lest I digresse from the matter, know that the King having had intelligence by certaine Merchants out of Persia, that the King of Persia mustered his men thzough all his dominions, intending to make a voyage into Spain, and to bring a mighty Army to invade the country of Spain, because the Kings of Castile, Aragon, and Portugal had refused to give their daughters in marriage to his son, fearing lest if Spain were invaded, Italy should become subject, and considering, that he had entered into league with the King of Persia, and divers times joyned with him against other Kingdomes, but loth in this expedition (so likely to turn to his wack) to become a helper or confederate, purposed to send me into Persia unto the King, to procure a peace between him and the aforesaid Kings of Castile, Aragon, and Portugal. I, though I thought my self altogether unfit to be imployed in such honozable kind of service, and matters of such importance, yet seeing it was his Majesties pleasure, as I thought it no manners to seem unwilling, so I prepared my self to put his Majesties pleasure in practise, and to provide all things necessary for such a journey. Therefore knowing the Kings pleasure, and the effect and sum of my message, I took my leave of his Majesty and the Queen, and in like manner of his son Hyppolito (who was so sorry for my departure, she could scarce bid me farewell) & so dispatched

Adventures in Love.

dispatched my selfe from the Court, being accompanied with nine men. What successe I had since my departure from Naples, you shall hear afterwards.

CHAP. XXVII.

How the younger Philoreus, being taken for the elder, was imprisoned by the King of Naples his command.

The second day after I went from Naples, the other Philoreus (son unto my Mother by that Castilian Captain) dwelling in the same City with the Sergeant that brought him from Cinqueni, chanced in the evening time to passe by a Noble-mans house, where Hyppolito the Kings son had been at supper; who standing at the doo; among certain Gentlemen, espied this Philoreus, and thought undoubtedly that I was the man, and that I had changed my apparel to the end that I should not be known to be Philoreus, which he imagined that I should have done, being unwilling to go in Ambassage unto the King of Persia, and yet feared to ask leave to stay at home, and to be discharged of that so troublesome a service, I being unaccustomed to deal in affairs of so great moment and importance.

He therefore stealing from his company, followed my brother (for we came both out of one wombe) and when he saw him in place where least company was, hee tooke him by the tip of his cloak, and calling him by his name Philoreus, bad him not be grieved though he were overtaken by him, seeing it was his lucke first to bee espied by him, that was the best friend that he had in the world. My brother knowing Hyppolito the Kings son, began to fall on his knees, to honour him according to the manner of the countrey, marveling that the young Prince used such words unto him. But Hyppolito loth that I should be knowne (for the King and all the Nobility knew not but that I was departed from Naples for Persia) with

The Troublesome and Hard

with something an angry countenance, uttered these words. Philoreus, if thou be wise follow my counsell, and leave these tokens of honour, lest thou be bewayed, and if my request will not serbe, let my commandement move thee to be more prudent and follow me. Philoreus my brother, ravished with marvel what this meant, and fearing to displease him, who might make him repent his offence, did as he commanded. And so they went together to the court, where Hyppolito bearing my brother into his chamber, and shutting up the doo, lest any of the Courtiers should interrupt them, and know of my being there, (thinking nothing lesse then that the same Philoreus was my Brother, seeing neither I my self knew that I had a Brother, nor my Brother that he had a Brother in the Court, by Fortune lifted to so high estate) began in this manner to speak unto him.

Ah Philoreus, who would have thought that the great discretion and wisdom, whereby you have obtained such love and credit at my fathers hands, had so lost his force and vigor, that it suffereth thee so indiscreetly and loosely to behave thy self, being imployed by his Majesty in a matter which might have beene committed to the chiefest person of the Realme? And art thou so bereft of all thy wits and understanding, that thou thinkest we are all so blinde that because thou hast put on another Garment, wee should not know thee? Thinkest thou that we are so forgetfull of thy labour, that the change of apparel is able to make thee unknown unto us? No, no, Philoreus, and although all other men were taken with oblivion of thy Face, yet the Picture of thy Visage, the Lineaments of thy Face, and the very Physiognomy of thy Countenance, is so deeply engraven in my heart, that no time, no change, no alteration, no colour, nor no deceit is able to rase out the print thereof.

Wherefore I cannot enough marvel Philoreus, that seeing thou knowest how I am affected towards thee (insomuch that thou canst not ask any thing of me that lieth in my power to grant thee, and be repulsed) thou hast notwithstanding so madly

Adventures in Love.

madly sought so dangerous (if I may say my mind) so cowardly and base means to shake of the charge committed unto thee by the King: whereas if thou hadst but let me know how thou wert unwilling to be imployed therein, I would have intreated my father, and perswaded him to send some other into Persia, that I might have enjoyed your company, for whose absence I doubt not but you perceived how sorry I was. And now, first you know, that though you were never more seen by us or known, yet you should be deprived of all the credit and honour which you had in the Court, being compelled to live in obscurity and base manner, wanting both wealth and fame.

Besides also: perpend not onely what injury you offer the King, but also the losse and detriment unto his subjects, and the neighbour kingdomes of Castile, Aragon, and Portugal, in that my fathers intent is frustrated, and an embassage of such moment, serving for the welfare of so many worthy kingdomes, neglected. The consideration whereof, I hope will make you come to knowledge of your fondnesse, yea rather madnesse, in committing so heinous an offence and hurtful trespass, whereby you have deserved the Kings indignation, who no doubt if he were acquainted with this your franticke kind of dealing, would with no lesse pain then death punish your delict,

But I judge that the Gods tending thy fortune, have made thee so happie, as that thou shouldst be espied by me before thy sinister doings were betrayed unto any other, and so revealed to the King my father, to the end that I might provide some remedy in this case, and save thee from the danger which otherwise thou wert like to incur.

My brother Philoreus, who all this while stood astonished, not knowing the event of this matter, marvelled what fury haunted the young Prince, to make such a large discourse unto him; he knew not what he meant by his embassage or what affair the King should have committed to his charge. seeing he had never been near the King, and was altogether unknown unto him; and therefore he knew not what he might imagine of this accident. But knowing that who so cometh near the

The Troublesome and Hard

fire is in danger to be burned, that who so playeth with the streams may be drowned, and that they that are near kings are subject to their power; began to fear lest this sport should be turned into spight; and this young Prince his pastime tend to his wack. And therefore he fel on his knees and made Hippolito this answer.

Most excellent Prince, I am a poore young man, unknown in all places of honour, and especially in the Court; howbeit that I know not how your grace knoweth my name. For I confesse my name to be Philoreus, yet I vow and protest before the Gods and sacred powers of heaven, that I never lived in the Court, never wore more sumptuous apparel then now I do; never spake unto his majesty or your grace, and that I know no more of what embassage you speak, or what charge you talk of, then I knew at the hour when I was first born. Wherefore I beseech your grace to pardon me, for I speak the truth, as your grace well knoweth, who taketh pleasure to mock his humble servant.

What Philoreus replied Hippolito, hast thou not told me thy self that thou wert born about the borders between the Kingdomes of Aragon and Castile, that thy father was called Coreandro, thy mother Delbia (for that was our mothers name) and that by reason of the wars between the said Kingdomes, thy father came with thee, and dwelled in the village Cinqueni, being under my fathers subjection, whence thou wert brought to Naples? Is not this most true? if not, say I lie,

God forbid (quoth my brother) that I should be so impudent as to give your grace the lie, seeing that I may in more decent manner deny that which is contrary to verity then so. And seeing I confesse all that to be true which your grace hath specified concerning my parents, my country, and my translation from the place where I was born unto this country, I hope your grace will pardon me if I deny that I never told the least point thereof unto you: for heaven confound me if ever I spake unto your grace before this time.

Hippolito moved to rage, burst out at length into these words

Adventures in Love.

words. Well Philoreus (quoth he) I perceiue thou art more then mad, and that thou doest openly mock me, for I say that the Gods are not Gods, if they confound thee not for thy falsehood. It were to be pardoned if thou didst onely offend against me, but seeing thou callest the Gods as witnesses of thy horrible falsities and lies, I cannot forbear it. But I pray thee tel me one thing; hast thou any brother liuing? No, (quoth my brother.) Why then (qd. Hippolito) art thou the same Philoreus that my father the King had from the Captain, upon the same day that the said Captain was married; who said that he brought thee from Cinqueni. True (quoth my brother) I was brought from Cinqueni, but yet I know no Captain that was married, or that gave me to the Kings Majesty. And if it wil please your grace to go with me, or send to the house where I dwell, you shall both know of him that brought me from Cinqueni and all his neighbors, that I have dwelled these seuen or eight years with him, even since the time y I was brought from the said village Cinqueni. It is a marvellous matter (qd. Hippolito) Philoreus, that thou wilt go about to perswade me to a tale, and to moue me to believe thy lies. For if thou wert a God I durst say thou liest. For thou hast no brother (so thou doest confesse) and I take all the Gods to witnesse that one named Philoreus boyn in the same place that thou acknowledgest thy self to be boyn in, and of the same parents that thou claimest to be thine, and of such fortune as thou sayest thine was. Then tell me how is it possible, but that thou thy self must be the man. And albeit thou hadst a brother, yet you should not make me believe that he can be so like thee, as that I should be so absurdly deceiued. Therefore seeing thou art so obstinate, thou shalt try what thou art able to gain therewith.

Herewith Hypolito taketh him by the hand and leadeth him unto the chamber of presence, where all the Gentlemen and Gentlewomen began to cherish and welcome him, asking the cause of his sudden return and why he had so disguised himself in apparel.

My brother almost out of his wits wist not what to think,

The Troublesome and Hard

but that either they were all more then foolish, or he born to be scoffed and mocked at: yea he could not a great while be perswaded but that he dreamed. But Hyppolito looking upon him, and seeing what countenance he bore, burst out into these words, all the Courtiers standing about. Most cunning counterfeit who ever saw the like? No doubt Philore-nus doth not or rather will not remember, that ever he knew any of all this noble company of Gentlemen and Ladies, whereas notwithstanding, they all disdain not to acknowledge, yea and claim old acquaintance. As he had so said, the King came into the chamber of presence to see what the matter was, (for he had already heard something touching my coming as they thought) and seeing my brother, welcomed him after this manner, O our Embassadour, you have either had wings to flye, or you have as much seen Persia as I have seen Iove; but I pray you tell mee what may bee the cause of this your holiday-coat? Have you met with fooles by the way? or are you weary of a Courtiers life? if the one, I was well addrested to send such a Legate to Persia, and if the other, I will soon reliebe thee from that care.

With that the King being angry at the heart, commanded his son Hyppolito to take order that he might be put into prison till hee had deliberated what death hee should die. Which thing when distressed Philore-nus heard, he fell on his knees and began thus to intreat his Majesty to be mercifull unto him. Most excellent Monarch, I beseech your Majesty by the religion & duty that all mortall men owe to the divine powers, to hear me clear my self of all such crimes which it should seem that I have committed against your majesty. For I perceiue that either it pleaseth your Majesty to exhilarate & glad your Courtiers with my misery, and threaten me imprisonment and death to giue them occasion to laugh at my simplenesse and innocencie, or there hath been some other man of my name and like me that hath committed this heinous offence against your Majesty which most falsly is attributed unto me. For I protest befoze heaven and earth that, I am not
that

Adventures in Love.

that Philoreus (if such an one hath been here) as I will prove by the souldier that brought me from Cinqueni, with whom I have dwelled ever since I was by him brought to Naples; as he and all his neighbors shall testifie, or Ile die what death your Majesty shall please to appoint.

The King hearing him so soberly protest and swear that he was not the same Philoreus they took him to be, commanded him to tell one of his guard whers the same souldier dwelt, which when my brother had done, the King commanded the same man whom my brother said was his master, and four or fife of his chiefest neighbors, should the next day come before him.

Insomuch that the same Sergeant being called Signori Valentino, accompanied with three or four Gentlemen of great credit dwelling in the same Parish, with him were brought, appeared before his Majesty according to his command and my brother being brought before them, the King asked them whether they knew that fellow?

They all answered yes, and told the King all other circumstances concerning my brothers Parents, and his coming from Cinqueni to Naples, affirming all what they had said, upon their oaths.

The King marvelled that all things agreed with the Philoreus for whom he took him to be, both his name, the place where he was born, the name of his parents; and other accidents onely this different, that he had dwelt with a Captain which gave him to the King, where these men testified that that Philoreus whom they had present, had dwelt with the Sergeant till that present day, and never entred into the Court; insomuch that the K. began to think that there were two brothers of them, and that they themselves knew it not by reason that they were separated one from the other so timely. But to the end that he might be the surer of this matter, he sent for the Captain of whom he had me. Who being come, and having seen my brother; the King asked him whether he knew any pryvy taken about my body whereby he might know

The Troublesome and Hard

me, if there were one in the world so like me that he might hardly be known from me. Such token (answered the Captain) I know none, my Soberaign Lord; neither is it necessary, for I nor any man that hath eyes can doubt of this man, but that it is Philoreus whom I brought from Cinqueni, and I will not onely say so, but also affirm it by oath, and die upon the same. The other Gentlemen that were present said that he might be deceived, for that they had already deposed the contrary.

To make few words if the King had not been present, they had gone together by the ears, and tried the matter not by words but by wounds rather, and by fight come to knowledge of the right Philoreus, but the King commanded them to return to their mansion place, and to leave the person concerning whom the question grew, (to wit my brother) with him, for that he would not be satisfied, but would have him kept in hold till such time as he might send into Persia after me to know whether I were there or no: imagining that if I were found there, then the same Philoreus that they had in the Court should be my brother; and if it were so, the King intended to give him some high office; but if contrarily I were not found in Persia, then it should be manifest that the same Philoreus was no other but the man who he was judged by all the courtiers to be, and both he and his pretended master, with the other Gentlemen that were before the King, should with death be punished for their madnesse, in taking upon them to depose such falsities, and so openly to mock with their King and Soberaign.

Well, they being returned, and my brother clapt in hold, two knights were dispatched from the court to Persia, who taking their journey the same way that I was prescribed to take, at every City that was of any fame, he enquired for me, but in vain; for they passed into Persia, and yet could hear nothing of me: neither in the way as they went thither, nor in the Court of the King of Persia, the reason whereof was as followeth,

Adventures in Love.

CHAP. XXVIII.

How the elder Philoreus going on his journey, was taken by Ægyptian Robbers. How the other Philoreus escaped out of prison by the means of Mistresse Cerasilla.



After I had travelled two days from Naples, as I rode with my men through a huge wood, we met with five and twenty Ægyptians, who having certain Cells in that Wood, lived upon the spoil of those that passed through the same. These Villains, ugly in countenance, in colour resembling Devils, and in stature Gyants, having espied us, and seeing that we were able to out-run them being on horseback, marched on before us, as if they had not thought of us till they had reached to a place serving fit for their purpose, where our horse hindered us more then they could advantage our valour. For we entered into a Thicket full of Thorns and Brambles, where we were compelled to alight, and lead our horses by the bridle, and had more trouble to pull them after us, then to pass our selves.

Now the Ægyptians therefore thinking it time to pursue their prey, came all of them towards us, and being most of them armed with demi-pikes and javelins, set upon us so fiercely on the sudden, that we scarce knew whether were the best, to resist their fury, or yeeld to their mercy. But seeing we had no time to deliberate upon the matter, quick expedition was necessary, and I perpending that all the mercy that such villains had was more then cruelty, I thought it better to die in the defence of our honour, then to fall into the hands of such barbarous rascals.

Then I drew my sword, as also all the rest did that were with me, and abandoning our horses, we dealt with the villains in such sort, that we woundee three or four of them dead.

The Troublesome and Hard

ly, but yet we could not escape their hands, by reason that they were so many of them, and had the vantage of us, in that they had half-pikes and we had none. To be short, the end of the conflict was such that I could more deplore it then avoid it; for the most of my men were slain, the rest escaped by flight, and I being thrust through the arm with a pike was taken by the Egyptian villains, and bound hand and foot, and so they cast me upon one of our horses, and brought me to their cels; whither they also conveyed the horses and my baggage. When I was brought to their cell, they began to consult what they should do with me. For they thought it pity (which affection did not proceed from any good disposition in them, seeing they were bereft of all good qualities, but rather was bred in them by the wil and pleasure of the Gods, who being moved to mercy would deliver me from the wicked villains) to kill me, seeing they had gotten so great a booty by me; and on the other side they feared that if I should escape, their knavery should be detected, by reason that I did not enely know their wicked kind of dealings, but also the place where they kept themselves, being the most secret place in the world. But after they had a long time deliberated upon the matter, they came by me and brought me such meat as they had (though I had no great lust to eat) and untied the cords wherewith they had bound me, but they put on a pair of shackles on my legges, for fear I should out-run them. Thus I lived among them the space of nine or ten moneths in such misery, that I wished death every day to deliver me from the wretched life which I led in that pittiful kind of captivity.

But I will return to my brother, whose hap was evil by reason of my mishap. For the knights that were sent into Persia to enquire for me, returned to Naples, and informed the King, that they had not heard any thing of me, and that they could assure his Majesty, that I had not been seen in Persia, nor in any place between Naples and Persia, save enely in one town about one days journey from the Court, in which place they had certain intelligence that I had been seen. Other information they had

Adventures in Love.

had none. The Sergeant my brothers master, and the other Gentlemen his neighbours upon this news, fled, fearing lest they should have been unjustly put to death, blaming Fortune for that she dealt so cruelly with them, that they were compelled by flight to save their lives when they had not in any manner deserved death. But the King being informed of their flight, caused all their lands and livings to be confiscated, and adjudged to his exchequer, and my brother Philoreus was the same day arraigned and condemned to be torn in pieces with four horses. But it chanced on that day which was appointed for his execution, that the Queen fell in labour, and was delivered of a daughter; to celebrate the feast of whose birth, my brothers execution was prolonged thirty days; for the King would not have any such act committed all the time the Queen lay in child-bed. In the mean time (most gracious Princess) may you think in what taking my poor brother might be, that will not how he might escape that cruel death which he was ordained to die, although his conscience cleared him of all offence or crime, whereby he might deserve any punishment.

But at last Fortune minding either to alleviate his grief, or to bring him into greater troubles, suborned a certain knights daughter which attended on the Queen, to snatch occasion of the delay which she heard the King had commanded to be made concerning the putting of my brother to death; and to seek means to deliver him out of prison, and thereby to save his life. For this Gentlewoman being called Cerasilla (whom I loved better then my self) thinking with the King and all the rest of the courtiers that my brother was the same Philoreus that courted her, and so earnestly made love unto her, that she might easily perceive that he loved and honored her above all other women; when she heard that Philoreus was condemned, she was exceeding sorry. But the good chance of the Queens child-bearing, by reason whereof the time of his death was prolonged, somewhat allwaged her dolour, and gave her hope, that she might find means to recompence the service which she supposed he had done her.

The Troublesome and Hard

Wherefore upon the third day after the young Princeesse was born considering that all the Courtiers were merry, and took more care how they might passe over the time with making good cheer, and recreating themselves with diuers sorts of pastimes. then they did in looking who were present or absent, or who went in or out of the chamber of presence: she stepped from the Queens private chamber to her chamber, and there araying her self in mans apparel; (for she had a sute belonging to her brother, which he had left in her chamber) and taking her apparel under her cloak, she hieth to the Gentleman that kept my brother, and finding him busie with playing at tables. asked him how it fared with Philoreus? the Gentleman thinking that she had been Mistrisse Cerasillaes brother (for he knew the cloaths. and her brother being but a young youth without any hair on his face, she was not misdoubted to be any other then he himself) told her that Philoreus would perhaps be as merry as the rest, if he knew not the day of his death, which though it were prolonged, yet it abated not his grief. I pray you (quoth the transformed Gentleman) may not a man talk with him? Why not (quoth the Gentleman?) If you please to speak with him, I will open the chamber doore where he is, and you may go to him. And with that the Gentleman let her in, and went to his tables again with the Gentlemen that kept him company. Shee being entred into the chamber where my brother walked up and down very heavily, saluted him and spake unto him in this manner.

Philoreus, albeit you perhaps are of opinion that I did indeed despise the courtesies which you have offered me at diuers times, as I seemed to make light of them in word, and that I rewarded thy service with inward hate as I feigned by outward frowardnesse, yet I hope thou shalt in time by trial prove this surmise false, and be forced to confesse that she is not ungratefull whom thou so often hast accused to be cruel. For though I did repay thee with a frown when I wished thee a labour, and yielded thee a lowering countenance when I wished thee a pleasing smile, to make proof of thy constancy: I
doubt

Adventures in Love.

doubt not, but now seeing I make thee acquainted with the cause, thou wilt not take the effect in ill part.

My brother, admiring at the strangeness of this speech, wist not what to answer. For he knew not the person that spake unto him, and was in doubt whether it was a man or a woman, her apparel shewing the one, and the course of her talk the other: and therefore he thought best not to interrupt her discourse, but to hear the end of her tale, which she continued on in this manner.

And considering (sweet Philoreus) that the greatest pleasure that may be done unto any man is to save him from the terrible of untimely death, I am resolved to shew thee no lesse gratuity and recompence for thy faithfull and loyall service, then to free thee from the Kings rage, or my self to incur the same danger that you be in your self. Unto which purpose I have my self put on my brothers cleathes, and brought mine under my cloak to attire you therewith, and so lead you out of this chamber where you are imprisoned, and rid you from the danger which you know that you now are in.

And for as much as delay breedeth danger, I pray you dispatch and follow my counsell, for the Courtiers are all so filled with wine, that we may passe and repasse without suspicion.

My brother was so perplexed, being surprised with gladnesse and grief together, that he could scarce tell what he should do; for though he suspected that this Gentlewoman mistook him as the King and the other courtiers did yet he feared least she had been suborned by the King to bring him into a fools paradise, and so to aggravate his misery. Wherefore as he stood amazed doubting what were best for him to do, she urged him in this manner to make speed.

Loving Philoreus dost thou now make so strange of her, that to save thy life putteth her on in hazard? Hast thou forgotten what pleasure thou wert wont to say I did thee in giving thee leave to speak to me, and art thou so chary now of thy tongue that thou wilt not utter one word? Thou hast of-

The Troublesome and Hard

Sometimes sworn that thou wouldst not spare thy life to do me service; and now I venture mine to do thy pleasure, wilt thou not accept of my service?

My brother considering that the worst that might ensue was death framed her this answer.

Sweet Lady, if I have displeased you with ungratefull silence, perswade your self that the onely cause thereof did proceed of the joy which I conceived of your presence. whereby I was wrapped in an extasse; in so much that my tongue and my other instruments of speech, as I thought to have welcomed you, denied me their accustomed duty, having lost their operation by reason of the excesse of gladnesse which possessed my soul. But I beseech you go not about to undo your self to save me, least in seeking my weal you procure your own woe, & so where but one should suffer death you bring both in danger.

Mistresse Cerasilla glad of his answer, but sorry to see him make no more hast, to do that which she desired. she spurred him forward saying.

Sweet Philoreus doubt not but I am perswaded of thy love towards me, and that I think of thy silence as thou sayest. As for the rest let me alone I hope where you fear we shall both fall in the trap, that we shall neither of us be snared in the net, and therefore be ruled by me, seeing womens wits have sometimes brought that to passe which mens minds hath admired.

To be short, my brother became mistresse Cerasilla in attire, and was apparelled in her cloaths, whose body was the habitation of my heart. accompanied by the Saint whom I worshipped though absent, and in whom my mind dwelled, though my body was in subjection to the villaines that kept me in their cells after they had robbed me and slain my men. Yet if I had then known of the love and affection of my mistresse towards me, and how willingly she would have endeavoured to deliver me from the barbarous entertainment of the Egyptian theebes, if she had known that her faithfull Philoreus was so afflicted; my misery (though it had been greater) could

Adventures in Love.

could not have been half so troublesome unto me, nor my filthy prison so noisome. But least I be troublesome unto this worthy company by digressing from the matter, know that my brother passed for mistress Cerasilla, and she for her brother, and bidding the Gentleman that was charged with him Adieu, they departed leaving him so busie at his game, that he tended his play more then his prisoner. Insomuch that they making all the haste they could, marched through the Court, and resembling that they went to walk in the fields, they spared not their legs, but sometimes running, sometimes going a round pace, they did advantage their journey in such manner, that the next morning (having travelled all night) they reached to the wood where I was, there thinking themselves out of danger, they rested.

CHAP. XXIX.

How *Philorenius* the younger, and *Cerasilla* lost each other in the wood: and how the elder *Philorenius*, was delivered out of the Egyptians Cell by *Cerasilla*.

Not though they had made sufficient provision of money, yet when hunger began to gnaw them, having digested their meat by their walk or rather flight, they wist not what shift to make for victuals. Insomuch that they went straying up and down the wood to see if they could find any roots or wild fruit growing there, intending to feed on them, till finding the way to some house they might buy other kind of meat. But mistress Cerasilla, being weary of ranging and overtaken with sleep, lay down amidst the bushes, and prayed my brother also to rest himself a while: but he having more mind to eat then to sleep, bid her take her rest and he would in the mean time seek for some victuals against she waked. Insomuch that he marked the place where he left her, and went towards the side of the wood whence he might see a chimney smoking. Whercof glad, though he fea-

The Troublesome and Hard

red lest he should be mett with, hee ventured and went to the house, where he found a poore old woman sitting by the fire all alone, and desired her of all friendship, to let him have bread for his money. The woman perceiving that he was some Gentleman of account (in mean time may it please you to note that my brother and mistresse Cerasilla had changed apparel in the way, each taking that sute which agreed to their sexe) told him that she had bread, but she feared it was too brown for his eating but he desiring her to let him have it such as it was, she brought him four loaves, which he took, and paying her as much as she asked, to the wood he returned as fast as he could: where he had espied a fountain, and therefore stayed not with the old woman to drink, she proffering him a glasse of Cydar, being a kind of wine made of apples. For he purposed to carry mistresse Cerasilla bread first, and then to lead her to the said fountain and there with her to quench his thirst. But when he came to the place where he left her, mistresse Cerasilla was not there; for waking out of her sleep, she went to see if she could meet with him; for because he had been something long away (seeing the place whither he went for bread, was about one league from the wood, and he had wandred up and down the wood about two or three hours, ere he came to the wood side whence he espied the smoak) she suspected that he was lost in the wood, and could not find the way to come unto her again. And so it came to passe, that she seeking him lost him, and he not finding her, lost himself. For he was so distracted with sorrow and grief that as a man abandoning all hope, & in a manner despairing, he sat down, and laying his elbow on the ground to support his head, began in this manner to exclaim against Fortune for her spighfull entreatment,

Oh Fortune, I perceive my destinies have ordained me to be the subject whereon thou mayest work thy power, and shew thy inconstancy: and whereon thou dost plant the banner of thy forces, and hang up the trophies of thy victories: For who is there that is acquainted with the course of my life, that dare deny, but that every part thereof hath bin guided by Fortune,
and

Adventures in Love.

and subject to her accidentary government? For after the day of my birth (the circumstance whereof may be attributed to no power but to the hidden secrets of Dame Nature onely) was it not a chance and accidental cause, that I should with my cradle by my parents be carried out of my country, and live in exile, before I knew what exile, yea what life was? was it not (say I) a token of the sparkles of anger which began to glister in the heart of Fortune, and a manifest sign that she began to menace and threaten me some disastrous hap in time to come? For I lived not many weeks after, but I saw the fire flame, which was kindled of the former sparkles, and I tried the force of her menaces. For before we could reach to any place where we might sojourn, death bereft me of my dear mother, before nature allowed me to acknowledg the benefit which by her I had and did receive.

This done, Fortune seemed not not to have weakened her anger sufficiently, and as yet became nothing more meek; for after my mother was buried, and her funeral rights celebrated, we came to the village Cinqueni, where I was deprived of my father, all the hold of my hope, and the pillar of my wellfare. Now Fortune thought her selfe prettily well revenged on me that had never offered her any wrong, and began to turn her frowns into smiles, and her anger into favour. For who can deny, but that it was an especial good turn of Fortune to snatch men out of the cruel claws of griping death, whereas none other might escape the rage and fury of the massacring soldiers that were sent to overthrow the said village, being the place of our habitation? Unlesse it be so that I had some brother, who (though I knew him not) received the same favour at Fortunes hands that I had, to the end that after we had been thyned up by Fortune, I in the house of the good Sergeant, and he in the court, we should both of us fall into the gulph of extreame misery, and that being led into adversity, we should feel the effect of Fortunes anger, which for a time she dissembled, feigning to favour us, where she procured means to wrong us.

But

The Troublesome and Hard

But among other calamities, what can be more grievous unto me, then to be so separated from my brother (if I may by Natures consent slaine any such title) that I never should have seen him yet, nor be like to see him hereafter? Neither is it a lesse torment for me, that by him I should be brought into these miseries, and that he should be cause of all my mishap, who no doubt, if he knew it, would if he could redresse my calamitie. But seeing he is not in Persia, assuredly some mischief hath befallen him, wherewith Fortune hath purposed to work both our destructions. The Gods grant that I may prophesse falsely, though the apparent shew of all things force me to divine the contrary. And lastly, this latter pinch of Fortunes spight, in that she is absent who is the cause that I am present, (yea, simpliciter that I am, for without her I had now not been at all) in rancour both surpasses all the malice that hitherto she hath ever endeavoured, laboured, or enterprised against me. Ah sweet Cerasilla, courteous Cerasilla, yea most loving Cerasilla, how wilt thou blame and accuse me of monstrous ingratelness if thou suspect that I have purposely left thee of free will and counsel, and voluntarily abandoned thee? But I hope thou wilt not hold such opinion of me but rather impute this hapless chance to Fortune, who hath sworn to make me miserable.

And alas whither shall I go, or what way shall I take? Since y sweet guide is taken from me in whose company I came hither, my coming is not from imprisonment to liberty, or thraldom to freedom, or from death to life; but rather from one kind of captivity, bondage & death, into another; altering the manner of my misery, not abating the extremity of my calamity.

Therewith my brother Philoreus, not able speak to any longer for the multitude of sighs which he fetched from his heart, and tears which spouted out of his eyes, he wept most bitterly, in which plight I will leave him a while, and declare unto you what Fortune mistresse Cerasilla had: who having prayed up and down the wood a long time, and calling for Philoreus as loud as she could, weeping & lamenting his absence
in

Adventures in Love.

In most grieuous manner, at length she espied the cel where I was penned up by the villains, who had that morning shifted me, and taking my apparel with them to sell it; gave me an old garment of theirs to cover my body withal; and so leaving no man but me in the cell, barred the dooꝝ on the out side and went their way: and Cerasilla having eyed the cell, hoping to find Philoreus my brother there (for she had forgotten her hunger) made hast to draw near, & knocking at the dooꝝ she heard her first Philoreus speak, for whose cause she made such account of the other being my brother. For when I heard one knock, I asked who was there? whereupon she answered. Ah sweet Philoreus! (thinking that I was the other whom she had lost, for our voices were not more different then our faces) what art thou there? I must confesse my self beholdtag to fortune for this good hap; but why dost thou not let me in? I having forgotten her voice, it being altered by reason of the affection wherewith in a lamentable manner she pronounced her words, replied. Whatsoever you be whom fortune hath sent to comfort me after my long imprisonment, if you wil see me, then must you from the out-side undo the dooꝝ and remove such bars or stops that hinder or let you from entring seeing I am shut in, and cannot come forth.

Cerasilla marvelling at my speech, with a knife she cut the string wherewith the cell dooꝝ was fastened, and opening the dooꝝ, asked me where I was? insomuch that I looking by the light that came in at the dooꝝ (for it was dark within) I saw Mistrisse Cerasilla stand before the cell, the sight of whose presence cast me into such a trance, y^t it might have been thought I had been metamorphosed, as they that looking on Medusæ's head were transformed into stones. But when Cerasilla saw that I neither came, nor gave her any answer, she stepped into the cell, where she saw me lye on the ground, not onely tongue-tied without speaking, but also leg-tied, being bound with a strong cord. Which sight, although it was sufficient to make her lose her wits, & become as much altered as I was my self: yet the necessity wherein I was requiring aid, moved her to o-

The Troublesome and Hard

Get come her own passions and to ad her helping hand to wake me out of the extasie wherein I lay. At length being come to my self, I said. Ah what fortune hath sent thee to this solitary wood to deliver me from this misery? Whose presence is more welcome to me, then if some heavenly Goddess had come to lose the hands which your most delicate fingers have untwined. and therewith twisted the knot of the true and sincere love, wherewith I most loyally honoured thee for the time that I lived in the Court. Ah Cerasilla had I known that thou hadst been so mindfull of my service, and that thou didst accept of the pains or rather pangs which I suffered for love of thee, the calamity which I have been pestered with in this noisom prison, for the space of these ten months or more, had not been so grievous unto me as it hath been. For the sweet thoughts and pleasant conceit which my brains hath been occupied with in perpending and remembryng your excellent beauty and rare vertues, hath taken more force in the pareke of my understanding, and so combyed my mind with the delightful memory of your personage, that it had quite blotted out all thought of the injury which I have receivd at fortunes hands, and expelled all such grief from my heart which I did take for the pitifull and lamentable entertainment which I have had in this loathsome cell. Where ever since the second day that I departed from the Court for I have been compelled to abide, being fallen into the hands of certain Egyptian thieves, who haunting these woods, violently set upon me and my men, being either all slain or some fled, robbed me of all my treasure and baggage that I had with me, and either pittying to kill me outright, or rather supposing they should use me too curteously if they ended my misery with death, they have kept me here in this cell in such manner as you find me; leaving me here this morning, and going to some town or other to sell the apparel which I had, seeing the money which they found in my male was much diminished, and their store greatly impaired.

Cerasilla ravished into admiration by the strangeness of this

Adventures in Love.

this accident, was doubtfull at the first of me, thinking that I had been the same Philoreus that came with her from the Court, and whose life she had saved by her policy: but well perceiving my words, and applying them to the things both past and present; she remembered that the knights who were sent into Persia said, that they had heard that I had been seen in a certaine towne within two dayes after I departed from Naples, and besides, she did see that I had on other cloaths then the man whom she left in the woods, which forced her to believe me, and to know how she had been deceived in taking another man instead of me.

CHAP. XXX.

How Philoreus the elder came to the Court with Cerasilla; how he came to meet with his brother, and apprehended the Egyptian theeves.



Will not here make mention of such congratulations and cherishments as she made me; leaving it unto your discretions to judge how joyfull men be at such happy meetings. In the mean time, it may please you to understand, that Cerasilla told me all that had happened in the Court concerning the other Philoreus, how he had not only my name, but my favour and my fortune, being born where I was born, exiled where I was in exile, and had the same parents that I had for mine; how that he was in the Court taken of all men for me, how that the knights were sent into Persia, and bringing news that I had not been there, he was condemned to be torn in pieces by four wild horses. And finally, how she had delivered him from danger of death, and lost him in the wood, supposing that it had been he when she heard me speak. Whereat I did the more marvell, by reason y I never heard y I had any brother. But after we had parleyed of all things, fearing lest we should be
taken

The Troublesome and Hard

taken together by the villains before we were out of sight of that accursed cell, we went into the wood as deep as we could; partly to escape them, and partly to find Philoreus my brother; for as Cerasilla could not be altogether merry for the hard luck that he was lost, so was I exceeding sorry, by reason that I so greedily desired to see him; to know whether he were my brother indeed or no. And as we had for the space of one whole day and night ranged up and down the same huge wood, at length we purposed to return to the Court, and to certify the King of all matters, informing his Majesty of the right truth. Hoping that his Majesty would not onely pardon Cerasilla, who was forced by love to do whatsoever she had practised in going away with Philoreus my brother; but also by proclamation recall him again, and the Gentlemen in like manner, that were fled to shun his unjust wrath and anger, restoring them their goods and livings that were confiscated. As in truth his majesty did. For when we were returned to the Court, not without great admiration of the King & Hyppolito the young Prince, with all the rest of those that were in the Court, and kneeling before his Majesty, had declared the whole estate of all such accidents and events as had hapned, he did not onely pardon Cerasilla, but descending from his chair of estate embraced me, and so courteously welcomed me, that I well perceived that his Majesty was no otherwise affected towards me, then he was at my departure from the Court.

Furthermore, he rested not, but the same day recalled the Gentlemen that had testified how my brother had dwelled with the Sergeant, and not onely restored them their goods and lands, but also bestowed no small gift on the said Sergeant my brother's master; taking order besides, that my brother should also be recalled, promising that as soon as he were returned to the Court, he would knight both him and my self: in memorial of that so rare an example of two brothers, that were so like one the other, the one nevertheless not knowing of the other.

But I to revenge the injury done unto me by those Egyptians

Adventures in Love.

egyptian thieves, and to punish them according as they for the cause of their abominable and wicked life merited, I obtained leave of the King to take one of the companies that lay in garrison in Naples, for the custody and safeguard both of the City and Court; therewith to march to the Cel where those villains had kept me so long; and coming thither we had such good luck, that we took them all saving one being but newly returned to the cell the night before. But missing one of them I commanded two or three souldiers to go into the cell, to see whether they could find no more there. They finding none but one being bound in such manner as they had used me, thinking that it was some poor man that the villains had caught (for they could not see what he was in the cell) brought him forth unto me, whom I and all the company that was with me presently knew to be the other Philareus my supposed brother. Which thing so filled my heart with joy, that I embraced him before he was unloosed. He not knowing who I was at the first marvelled, but after he had heard me declare unto him how I had found Cerasilla, & had shewed him favour, he perceived & I was & same Philareus whom he was thought to be, & beholding me, at length burst out into these or such like words.

Sir, seeing I neither dream, nor behold any proportion in a looking glasse I confess that both the King had great cause to bear an opinion of me as he did, and these villains to use me as they intended; who meeting me in the wood as I had lost mistress Cerasilla, thinking I had been the man they robbed & kept in their cel, & because I denied I knew either the or their cel, they appointed to kill me as soon as their fellows was returned, whereby I perceived that you had been in their hands, and had got from them, seeing they could as little be perswaded that they had never seen me, as the King & all his courtiers; for in truth I my self if I had not known as much as by fortunes forwardness I have tried, concerning the similitude & likeness between your person and my self. I would now have thought, that you had been of the nature of the glasse that receiveth the colour of every object body: whereas you say that the Gods
Arise

The Troublesome and Hard

Strive against fortune to free us from her forwardnesse, I am constrained to say no lesse, seeing that it hath pleased their Deity by him to lose me from this danger of death, by reason of whom (though not by his procurement) all my troubles and miseries took beginning. Wherefore seeing that our luck is such that as the evil successe of your fortune was cause of my misery, so the recovery of your hap hath bred my blisse, and delivered me from the extreame perill wherein my life was placed. What may I say lesse, but that the Gods knowing how we have by fortune been wronged, have rescued us from her fury.

But because it would be too long for me to rehearse, and tedious for you to hear the end of his speech, and the other talk which we had between us, concerning such matters as had happened by reason of our great likenesse, I will onely tel you, that after we had had some conference touching our parents and other matters, we caused those Egyptian villains to be tied to the horse tails, and so traileed along the ground till we came to Naples, where the hangman saved his labour, seeing that no person thought he had done his duty unlesse he had helped to pull and tear the flesh of some part of those Egyptian wretches, that had caused such confusion and wrought so much harm, had not the foresight of the mercifull Gods hindered their intent. Insomuch that within two hours after these Egyptian slaves had entered the gates of the City, they were by the people halled and pulled into a thousand pieces.

I will not here make long rehearsall, how honourably my brother was used by the King, but it shall be sufficient if I declare how that the King after he had welcommed my brother in all courteous manner with a pleasant countenance, as wel bejoyning grace and mildnesse, as Majesty and gloze, remembering his promise made unto me in word, did perform no lesse indeed, and knighted us both together the same day.

Now (most excellent Princes and worthy shepheards) die we think that we had so troden fortune under foot, that she was not able ever to rise again, or impair us any more. Now
lived

Adventures in Love.

lived we as two brothers in all kind of prosperity, and so high hoisted to the top of blisse, that we little thought that any power had been able to cast us down and deprive us of our present felicity. But alack we found the contrary by triall, and were compelled to acknowledge our error by experience. Better had it been for us with the carefull and wary Mariner to consider that an extraordinary calm, is token of some future tempest to come on the sudden: for then as he at such times striketh his sails, and shunning the dangerous seas, commendeth his bark to the secure haven; so we foreseeing the danger unto which we were subject in our great prosperity, might have escaped the events which brought our adversity. But seeing things past may be deplored not recalled, and repented, not amended; I must needs say that we bought had I-will, at a dear price: as you shall understand by the sequell of this history. But seeing I have not yet mentioned any thing concerning my father, and the Captain my brothers father, since that they fled from Cinqueni, at the time that we were brought from thence to Naples, I mean first to let you know what luck they had in their flight, before I go any further in declaring the success we had, so securely triumphing in the Court, after we were delivered from so much misfortune and evil hap as for a time we suffered, onely by the malice of those Egytian villains which were suborned by fortune to shake the foundation of our felicity.

When Cinqueni the place whence we were brought to Naples, was by the souldiers sent by the King to execute his wrath on the inhabitants thereof, pilld and speiled, Coreandro my father thinking that I was dead (for he had heard that none in all the village were left alive, neither men, womē, nor children, and he did not know that I was saved by a Captain and led unto Naples) thought to return home again to his country, and there live among his friends. seeing hee had no other comfort in the world, being by fortunes pestilent hatred, bereft not of goods onely, but of wife and child also. Insomuch that he having resolved to return home to the place of his birth

The Troublesome and Hard

birth took his way from the said village along the coasts of Italy towards Aragon, where after he had marched one day, the next morning rising betimes, to take the advantage of cool Aurora, before Phoebus rayes compelled the travellers to seek for shadow amidst their journey, he passed through a little short wood where he heard the other Coreandro, the good captain my brothers father, lament and bewail his hard fortune, in this manner.

Oh Fortune, men paint thee standing upon a Globe, as thereby decyphering thy inconstancy: which their opinion made me always deceive my self with vain hope, trusting that thou wouldest once turn thy frowardnesse into lovingnesse and thy frowns into favours. But I perceiue thou hast made choice of me by experience of mine owne miseries and aduersity, to oppose my self against all men in thy defence, seeing that where as they all generally hold opinion, that thou art the very essence of inconstancy and mutability, each one particularly exclaiming upon thee, and blaming thee for thy fleeting unstablenesse; I in contrary manner am forced and compelled to affirm against them all, that thou art not inconstant or unstable, but rather too much constant persisting and stiff in thy purpose, hard to be moved, stiffe-necked, continuing to the end, tough, and hard to be overcome.

All which may be manifestly proved by the course of my life, by the adventures that by thy appointment have chanced and happened unto me, which all of them have been so unhappy, so unfortunate, and so unluckie, that it were a hard matter to judge which of them deserbeth the superiourity in name and title of infelicity. In all which my aduersities, thou hast so constantly remained in thy envious and malicious frowardnesse, that in this my latter mishap thou hast not any whit deflected or turned aside from that cruelty which thou didest use against me in all my other misfortunes. What shall I then say? Shall I call thee constant because I am forced to say that thou art inconstant or mutable? No, no, constancy is too laudable a vertue to be attributed to such a spightfull and hard-necked
Goddesse

Adventures in Love.

Goddesse. Thou art not constant, because not inconstant, for y^e extremity which corrupteth y^e vertue is as contrary to vertue as vertue to vice. Inasmuch that I cannot attribute unto thee y^e name of constant, unless it be in envy, spight and cruelty, for so thou arte ever, & in hatred, rancor, & malice dost thou continue alwaies. Thy delight is to see others grieved, thy sport to see others spurned with the kick of aduersity; thy play to see others pained; thy pleasure consisteth in plaguing them y^e imploye thy help. Thou laughest at them that weep for their mishaps to move thee to pity, thou scornest thē y^e honoz thee, thou mockest them that praise thee; thou deceivest them that trust to thee; thou abusest them that flatter thee, and them that despise thee, thou endeavourest to be revenged of them; though they of all others least care for thy might, least fear thy power, & therefore are least injured by thee. Fret at them thou mayest and faine, stare, and stamp, but hurt them thou canst not, for it passeth thy Deity to overthrow them that with true patience, forbearance and sufferance, shield and arm themselves against thy spight and rancor.

Therefore seeing that those that invoke thee most religiously, are most unrighteously by thee injured; that those that most deserve to be rewarded, are most punished; and that those that account most of thee, and think of thee most reverently, are most neglected, and most villanously dealt withall by thee. I that have thus long most zealously made thy altar smoke, by reason of the incense which I have always from my cradle offered unto thee, will and do now forsake and leave thee, as knowing at last, and acknowledging the error and heresie wherewith I have thus long been infected. Hereafter shall not Coreandro serve thee any moze, or offer thee sacrifice, seeing thou hast not onely spoiled him of his goods and riches, but also deprived him first of his dear and well-beloved Delbia, and now at last of his dear son Philoreus, whom thou hast appointed to be most barbarously killed and murdered in his childhood, and left me alive to bewail and lament his untimely death.

The Troublesome and Hard

My father hearing the latter end of the Captains complaints, marvelling what he might be that so railed at fortune for an other mans mishap and mischance; for he having heard him repeat the injury which she had offered Coreandro, he thought he had meant of himself, and went into a certain thicket, where he saw the man that so blamed and exclaimed against Fortune for her severe and cruel dealings with Coreandro, in depriving him of his lawfull wife Delbia, and his welbeloved son Philorenus: but because he knew him not, nor remembered that he had ever seen him before that time, marvelled greatly what he should be, and how he came to know him and me, for he had heard him name both him and me.

Wherefore after he had well looked on him, and thoroughly beheld him, he spake unto him in this order. Sir, I pray you not to be displeased with me for pressing so near you, seeing the cause which moveth me thereunto, proceedeth not from malice, or intent to trouble or injure you any way, but rather from love and affection, desiring and wishing to comfort or pleasure you according to my power, which by Fortunes forwardnesse is so impaired and weakened, that my good will is more to be regarded then my ability. I perceive by your face and heavy countenance, that you have some cause to exclaim against Fortune either for your self, or for some other. But by the way, I am moved by the remembrance of the good amity and great friendship which in times past hath been betwixt me and Coreandro (whose mishap in losing his wife and son I heard & so pittifully to lament) to be so bold as to ask you why Coreandros case so grieveth you, as that he himself could not more bewail his own misfortune, or be more grieved thereat, then you are?

The good Captain not knowing my father more then he was known by my father, framed him this answer. Good sir, though I had had any occasion (as I have had none) to be displeased at your coming to me, yet by reason that you have been so well acquainted with Coreandro, as you say, your coming unto me, could not but have been so welcome unto me, that all displeasure

Adventures in Love.

sure would quickly have been banished and forgotten. For the great love and affection which I bear unto that man, and did bear to his wife Delbia, and his son Philoreus, above all other creatures in the world, is the cause that I so lament and bewail his miserable and pittifull mishap. Wherefore seeing I have answered your question, I pray you tell me where you have been so acquainted with Coreandro? Where (quoth my father?) in Spain, in Aragon, in Italy, at Cinqueni, and in every place where Coreandro himself hath been, inasmuch that he was nowhere, but I was with him, nor I any where but he was by me. But I pray you (quoth my brothers father) do you know him if you see him? Should I not know him (quoth my father?) As well as my self. Why then (quoth the Captain my brothers father) you know that I am Coreandro, do you not? Nay (quoth my father) rather do you know that I am the man, When I perceive (said the other) that you came to mock with me, and so intreated me not to be displeased with you, intending to give me cause of displeasure before you meant to depart from me. Nay verily (answered my father) now I mark what the matter is; you knew that I was to passe this way, and therefore you came to this place to lament the misfortunes of Coreandro, to draw and entice me to come unto you, and so to be mocked and laughed at. But know whatsoever thou art, that if thou be so favoured of fortune, that thou challegest licence to scoff at them that by fortunes spight are forced to grieve for their crosse hap, thou maiest so be punished by the just judgement of the revenging Gods, that thou shalt be moved to cry peccavi too late, and to acknowledge thy offence, when it will be too late for thee to repent.

The good Captain hearing my father so earnest, wist not what he might think of the matter; but he began to remember, that his wifes first husband was called Coreandro, and that he also had a son called Philoreus. But because he thought that he had been dead long ago, he could not think it should be he; especially because it seemed by him, how that he had lived at Cinqueni, and that his son Philoreus (that is my self) should

The Troublesome and Hard

have been killed of the same souldiers that had slain his own son, who was also called Philoreus, for the same reason which hath already been told you. For it seemed scarce credible to him, that the other Coreandro and his son, whom he thought both to have been dead long since, should have lived so near him, and that he should not have heard of him; yet he thought best to set aside all anger, that in case it were he, he might shun all occasion of strife and immoderate speeches: and therefore though he saw my father so hot, yet he nothing changed, spake thus coolly to him. Sir, I neither knew of your coming by this way nor ever saw you or knew you before to my knowledge, and therefore the Gods punish me with their wrath if I either scoff or mock with you: but as I came from Cinqueni, being over-burthened with the sorrow which I conceive for the losse of my child, which was killed at the said village by the barbarous souldiers, I entred into this grove, & was forced by the multitude of my miseries, and greatnesse of my grief to rail at that most cruel Goddess Fortune, who taketh delight to glut her self with the overthrow of mortal men. And was your son (quoth my father) called Philoreus? Yea, that he was (quoth he.) And was your wife (quoth my father) called Delbia? She was, answered he again. Why then quoth my father, if thou be Coreandro, thy wife Delbia, and thy son Philoreus, what shall I be with my Delbia, and my Philoreus? For if I am not Coreandro that had to wife Delbia, on whom I begot Philoreus now massacred at Cinqueni, heaven plague me.

The good knight hearing my father so solemnly protest that he was Coreandro, desired him to make him some copious and true relation of his life, what he was, where he was born, in what place he was married, and by what fortune he was brought into Italy; and how that then he would satisfie him in all points, and so content and certifie him that he should not only know, that he did not jest nor mock with him, but also confesse and acknowledge that he had very great reason to think himself mocked of him.

Where

Adventures in Love.

Whereupon my father very largely rehearsed unto him; the whole discourse and history of his life, whereby the good Knight knew that hee was that Coreandro whom hee thought had been dead, and therefore had married his wife Delbia by whom he had his son Philoreus. And presently he told my father all whatsoever had hapned and chanced between my mother Delbia and him, how he saved her from the villany which the King of Castile intended to use against my mother, how he brought her to her village house to look for him, and not finding him there, they went to the city Targonna to seek him: and how they afterwards understood of certainty that he was dead, as he could verifie and prove by divers of his wifes friends at the City Targonna.

Besides, he told my father in like manner, y^e coming out of y^e Castle to escape the better, he called himself Coreandro. And when he was come forth, he being credibly informed of his death, married Delbia, and that he had within a year after a son by her whom she would have also named Philoreus, in remembrance of her first Philoreus, whom she supposed to be dead. In a word, he left nothing untold but let him know the cause of his wife my mothers death, with his voyage to Cinqueni, and all other things that hapned even till their meeting.

My father greatly rejoiced at this discourse, partly for that he heard such particularities of his wife, of whom what was become, he never had heard any certainty, and partly also, because he was disburthened of that heavie load of false suspicion bred in his breast by reason of the King of Castiles odious proclamation made against my mother Delbia. For until the very hour that the good Knight, the other Coreandro, my brother Philoreus his father, had informed him of the true verity of all matters concerning my mother Delbia, did he verily think and perswade himself, that my mother of wantonnesse got secretly away from the King of Castile, not to seek him her husband, but to run away with the Knight, and lewdly to live with him, setting aside and quit giving over her kind love, and amiable kindnesse which she was wont to profess to her

The Troublesome and Hard

her quondam dear husband. And therefore now knowing the contrary, although he made exceeding sorrow for her death, yet the perswasion which reason by means of the good Knights true and not dissembled relation, had ingrafted in his heart of her loyalty, did not a little comfort him in this his singular perplexity, both for the losse of so good a wife, and so dear a son. And besides all this, the company of so valiant and worthy a Knight, and vertuous a person, (in all points as little beholding to fortune for prosperity as himself, seeing they both lamented the death of one woman, and especially the pitifull mishap of us their sons (thinking that we were massacred at Cinqueni) which were unto each of them most pleasant objects to remember their Delbia our mother, and most sure pawons and tokens of her chaste and loyal love towards them our fathers) did breed him such solace, that he thanked the Gods for bestowing so much comfort upon him in this his latter, and greatest extremity. In like manner the good Knight Don Alvarez de Bazora, of late Coreandro, pouring out tears incessantly for joy of his good hap in meeting so luckily with my father, thought himself in ample manner beholding to the Gods for that singular benefit; protesting that he could not, being in that case, have wished for a more blessed day than that, wherein he so happily met with my father. Thus joyning in company, they marched together towards the City of Targonna in Aragon, intending there to live and die together, enjoying each others presence, glad of each others company, having each of them lost his son. Where I will leave them in this their journey, and return to the rest of mine own fortunes, and my brothers, who now both of us were lifted up to high estate, and so prosperously lived in all kind of sovereign pleasure, that we thought it as possible for fortune to abase the greatnesse of our weal, as for us to impair the divine estate of the heavenly powers.

Adventures in Love.

CHAP. XXXI.

How Mistresse Cerasilla died for sorrow that she could not discern the elder Philoreus from his brother. How he became enamoured on Aureola, and the conference that passed between them in the Garden.



At the end that I may let you understand how soon we were forced to recall our minds from that heresie. it may please you, most excellent Princeesse and noble shepherds, to know, that we (I mean my brother and I) living in this most happy estate, began by reason of our great leasure, which the peaceable quietnesse of the Neapolitan State yielded us, so to give our selves to all kind of sports and pleasures, that we thought that day ill spent, wherein we had not invented some new delight to pleasure our Mistresses withal. Now we invented new kinds of dances, now strange manners of Vaulting, now rare Pasquos, now new devised Enterludes, and in one word, all kind of toys that Italian wits had bred in times past, we either altered or augmented; wherein we used such dexterity, that we seemed to have been born to that purpose. But howsoever we behaved our selves therein, we were so liked of all the Courtiers of both sexes, that our company was gratefull to all men, and shunned by no man. The King, the Queen, and Hyppolito the young Prince, so loved and favoured us, that they would not denie us any thing that we could ask. And we, as we found our selves to be brothers (having the same Name, Parents, Countrey, Shape, & fortune) so we sware everlasting friendship, and allegiance one to another. So loving one the other, that though I know that it were impossible for any man in the world so to love any one as I loved him, yet am I forced by the consideration of his wonderfull deserts towards me, and by the tryal which I have had of his loyalty, to doubt whether my love or his were the greatest.

And

The Troublesome and Hard

And because we would in all things be alike, and despite the world of all means to know and discern one of us from the other, we continually apparelled our selves alike, both in the same colour, fashion, and order. Insomuch that it was hard for the best discerning wit that the world could bring forth, to know the one from the other, or to find any difference between us. Which thing, as generally it troubled most of all the courtiers, so particularly it was cause of Cerasillaes death, who (as I told you before) bearing me good will and taking my brother for me, when she conveyed him out of prison, and saved his life, and having lost him in the wood, afterwards also delivered me from the villainous Egyptians, and so was cause of all our blisse. This poor Gentlewoman, loving us both excellently well, and deserving likewise to be honoured of us, for very sorrow that she could not discern me from my brother, pined, and falling into a consumption died. Whereof though we were passing sorry, yet the youthfulness of our young hearts receiving the impression of the beauty of a young Gentlewoman sister to the Countesse Verina, quickly forgot the funerals of Mistresse Cerasilla. Yet because we could not but acknowledge that we were in great sort beholding unto her, we bestowed this Epitaph upon her.

Sweet sweetness lies beneath this marble stone,
Which prays all loving hearts her death to mourn.
Her flower is fall'n, though were her years but green;
When Life's most sweet, she bitter Death hath seen:
We, that of her this here have written in,
Had, but for her, now neither of us bin.

By *Phi* *mas.*
lore
Phi *mas.*

But leaving her in her sepulcher, I will return the sister
of

Adventures in Love.

of Countesse Verina, who being a most beautifull Gentlewoman, named Distresse Aureola, so enchanted my mind by the commanding force of her sweet face and sugred tongue, that I admiring the much decent colour of the one, and the well governed volubility of the other, was so ravished in the pleasing delight which her perfections caused in my heart, that I judged no woman fair, none witty, and none eloquent, but golden Aureola. Who as she passed all women in comeliness of body, and pure snow-like whitenesse of skin, so none came near her in those hidden qualities which bred in the brain and fostered in the heart, are made known by the tongue. But to be short, such were her graces both inward and outward, that they pierced my heart in such manner, that I was forced to acknowledge my self her servant, and Cupids captive, being subdued by his policy in using the imperiall beams of her beauty, instead of darts to infringe and break the privilege of my liberty. Well I loved Aureola, and so loved Aureola, that for the love of Aureola I could have hated my self.

I then being in this case, began to imploy my brains in searching out manner, and procuring means to make my affection known to the Saint I so truly honoured. And truly in short time not Aureola's self onely, but my brother also, began to perceive the fire which being kindled in my heart, did cast out such a cloud of love-smoke. Now I glad that Aureola knew the manner of my sickness, but gladder that she seemed not male-content of my welcontentednesse, and nothing displeased that my brother was acquainted with my passion, seeing that he was an Alcego, my self in. I will not say another body (for it was too like mine to be differenced) but another place; thought my self the happiest man that lived.

We may judge how much more blessed I would have accounted my self to have been if I might have doubled my single life by marriage with her. Unto whom to lay open the pain which punished my heart for the cause of her, I sought occasion very diligently. Inasmuch that opportunity being

The Troublesome and Hard

presented unto me within a few days after, and espying her walking by her self and the trees alone in the garden, where her sisters lodging was, I thought it but a negligent part to omit that fortunate hour, and therfore knowing that the Countesse her sister was gone to the Queen, I posted to my mistresse with a sound courage hoping to return victorious, or with good hope of victory. Into the Garden I stepped, and having set on half a dozen paces forwards towards her; I might see her turn being at the end of the walk. Whose heavenly face so dazeled mine eyes with the glance that she cast from the other end of the garden, that I soon acknowledged, that no Sun could so have dimmed my eyes, but the double Titan which like two little mozas of grace are such ornaments to her face, that as they are beholding to it for that it honoureth them, so is it bounden unto them because it is by them adozned and beautified.

At length I came so near her, that manners warned me to salute her, though I was so astonished at her celestial shape, that I could moze fire mine eyes to behold her with admiration, then fashion my mouth to salute her with civility. Yet love taught me to beware of committing so foul and grosse a fault, as not to give her a courteous good morrow, who was the efficient of my disquiet evenings. Therfore greeting her after the humblest and lobingest manner my passion forced me she answered me after this manner. Good morrow sir Knight, you are very maticious this morning. Whatsoever the cause be; but I pray you what weather drove you towards these quarters so early? Truly Madam (quoth I) my good fortune: seeing I have met with no worse company then your sweet self. For as I passed by the Garden wall, by chance looking over with a long neck, I espied you walking by your self alone and so I thought it good manners to step near and give you the buen giorno. And if I thought that my boldnesse in pressing so near you, perhaps in such time as you had rather give respite to your solitary delight; then otherwise be troubled, should offend you; as I came intending not to displea-

sure

Adventures in Love.

sure you, so I would depart without performing any thing whereby you might have occasion to be discontented. No, no, sir Knight (quoth she) bestrew me if ever I could be offended with good company, neither have I any such melancholy humour as to delight in being alone, but that sometimes I am compelled to be solitary for lack of good company. And then I must of necessity walk alone, and recreate my self with viewing natures diligent businesse in beautifying the earth with such pleasant ornaments and fair tapestry, as passeth all artificial industry, I mean these fine herbs and flowers, which both in smell and colour so delight humane senses, that we must needs acknowledge our selves beholdng to daime nature, for presenting us with such a worthy kind of delectation. But you are now come even in good time to let me know your opinion in one thing that I am breaking my brain upon. What is that Madam (quoth I?) Harry (quoth she) this. You see here Violets, Roses, and Lillies, growing all together in one place, I have been musing with my self a great while which of all these three should bear away the praise, if question were made which of them were the finest flower; for I promise you, in my mind they seem to scribe each with other in excellency. They do verily Madam (quoth I) and seeing you desire to have my foolish verdit in judgement of their excellency, I think in this case, we ought to have a regard unto natures intent, and take advice of her who seemeth to use policy in the manner of the growing of these flowers, that the Rose-bush grows thick and untowardly, the Rose budding out in divers places without order, and seemeth rather to serve for a wall or hedge to environ other flowers, as is apparent by the intent of him that hath planted these roses as the curtain running about the bed where he placed the Lillies. In like manner the Violet also groweth confusedly and low, close to the ground to betoken humility, and so the Gardener hath planted them in this place to be as it were the foot-cloath and coverlet to shrowd the homely face of the earth from the glorious aspect of the stately Lillies, which growing most proud-

The Troublesome and Hard

ly on one stalk, being erected most straightly and bearing majestic seem to challenge the supremacy. Inasmuch, Madam, that my opinion, following the intent both of Nature and the planter is to crown the Lilly with the garland bearing title of the finest flower as unto which, I deem all flowers inferior for divers respects. And therefore no doubt did Juno the Queen of heaven, challenge the Lilly as presently belonging to her calling it her Rose: for thereby hath and is the Lilly yet called Junonis rosa. By my faith, sir Philoreus (quoth she) you have said prettily well as touching this matter. But yet me thinks we ought to consider the inward vertue of the flowers as well as the outward bravery. The Lilly is stately indeed, but yet the Rose it serveth for many good uses, and being either preserved or preserved is kept a long time in Apothecaries shops, to be ministred unto men in their sicknesse whereas the Lilly onely serveth for the senses of smelling & sight, and being fully opened, is either with the wind blown of, or withereth and decayeth in the pride of Phoebus, being mounted in his noon-point. Nay but Madam quoth I, I think you formed your question which was the finest flower, which I meant not for the vertues or natural efficacy of the flower, but rather the exteriour shape and shew thereof. And yet I doubt not but the Lilly hath many hidden and secret vertues: for I have heard that the water of the same flower, yea and of the herb thereof is very good for divers purposes, which by hap you better know then I my self, seeing they be peculiar and proper to your sex. Well, well quoth she be it so sir Philoreus; But as you well mentioned, I understand the matter as you do, and move not the question for the interiour quality, but for the exteriour accidents.

Compare then the Rose to the Lilly, what fairer sight can the clearest discerning eye see then a Rose, so providently formed Nature, that it seemeth rather to be some artificial collection of leaves wrought by science, then a natural bud spreading it self abroad, and making shew of such a glorious beauty as all the most learned workmen of Italy cannot do the like.

Adventures in Love.

I perceiue Madam (quoth I) that you are an especial fauourite to the Rose, but for my part the Lilly shall beare away the honour: for if you stand upon the form or fashion of the flower, I pray you how can a fairer or better made flower be seen then the Lilly? which being made in the form of a Bell with the Clapper in it. hath been by diuers Ladies called Campana Virginea the Virgins Bell And to say no lesse then is true me thinks it well deserves the same name, seeing it doth in statelie growth, resemble the well-fashioned proportion and statelie countenance of maids, in colour their whiteness, and in the yellowness of the seed, the golden locks of their glorious hair: insomuch that diuers parts are beholding unto the Lilly for arguments of similitude and comparison which it yeldeth them, thereby to extoll and commend the whiteness of diuers Gentlewomen, whose praises they penned, saying they were Lilly white, like Lillies statelie, soft and slick as Lillies, and as the Lilly so sweet. And to adde a very truth, what is there of all sweet sweet scents comparable to the sweet sweetness of the Lilly? May say there sir Philoreus (quoth she) for what sweeter smell can the nicest nose wish for, then that which the Rose yeldeth: for in my judgement the Rose casteth the most glowing smell of any other flower. The most glowing smell indeed Madam (quoth I;) for it is of such a forcible and strong scent that it giveth sufficient notice to men that it is bitter in tast. And to say that which must be said, in my phantasie, it giveth too strong a smell to be compared to the sugred sweetness and sweet delicateness of the dainty Lilly, which yeldeth the choicest smell, and most fragrant scent that can be. But in the mean time sir Philoreus (quoth she) whilest you magnifie the Lilly, and I the Rose, the forgotten Violet may iustly complain of the wrong we offer it, that we so contend & strive to set forth the praise of the Rose and the Lilly, that we give no commendation to it, though it deserve to be highly esteemed: notwithstanding that y said before that it grew low in token of baseness. And seeing you do so stoutly stand for your statelie Lilly me thinks I dare nevertheless compare the base Violet

The Troublesome and Hard

as you term it, to the proud Lilly. For doth not the sweet Marjoram grow lower then the rank Fern: and yet how far the lower excels the taller in swētness and virtue, you will not, nay you cannot deny. In like manner the fragrant Time, so beloved of the painful grows close to the ground, where the Broom sprouts very high; yet is the Time of other virtue than the Broom. And so of many more flowers which I need not mention, seeing one, or two may serbe for an instance to falsifie your small reasons. But I pray madam (quoth I) deal not so sophistically with me, as to argue with me a Male conjunctis. For I say not that the Lilly is the finest flower because it grows highest, for so I would grant my reason were but fondly grounded; neither do I say, that the Lilly deserves the head praise among all flowers because it grows not confusedly, but in decent and comely order; for there are many flowers that growing disorderly, in swētness of scent surpass divers well ranked flowers; and lastly, I say not that the Lilly is the excellentest flower because it is so sweet a flower: but thus I form my reason. That, stately stateliness, white whiteness, gallant gallantness, and sweet sweetnes, all these predominant qualities meeting together in the brave Lilly, make her worthy to be honored as the fairest, finest, and bravest flower that Nature hath framed.

By this the Countess Verina being come to her lodging, Mistress Aureola was to retire from the garden to her sister, and so I was forced to leave her, having missed of my purpose, and no time to break my mind to her in plain words, although amidst our dispute concerning the excellency of flowers, I used such passionate looks, that she might well perceive whereto my discourse tended; but howsoever she thought of it, I know not, but our parting was so amiable, that after I had lost the sight of her, I felt that I parted from her without parting. For my body might well be contained in some other place than hers, but my mind followed her wheresoever she went, as trustily as her own shadow.

Adventures in Love.

CHAP. XXXII.

How Philoreus the younger was enamoured on Aureola, concealing it from his brother; and how his brother came to the knowledge thereof.

In the mean time (excellent Princes and worthy Shepherds) you may note that my brother loved her (I mean my golden Aureola) as intirely as I my self, his love being unknown to me. For though he knew that I loved her, yet was I not as yet acquainted with the love that he bore Aureola. And in truth, because he knew she was the onely air by which I lived, rather then he would do any thing to procure my disquiet, resolved himself to die for love of Aureola, rather then he should opportunate Aureola to love him, and to deprive me of that without which I could not live. Insomuch that although he so loved her, that for her he would willingly have yielded to death, and resigned his life, yet he no way to offend me, did not onely conceal his love from Aureola, but also occasion being offered him to talk with her, did spend all that time in commendation of me, protesting unto her, that I was so faithfull, constant and loyal, that if she would dain to reward my love with love, and if she did love me, she would have cause to glory of her hap in fancying him, and placing her love on him, who would prove the faithfullest Amant that was in Italy.

Besides this, he made divers verses in praise of her, and together with sundry habits and precious jewels presented them unto her, saying that I had sent them; whereas in truth I knew not any thing of them. Insomuch that more by his industry then mine own diligence (though I neglected no dutifull service required in that case) at length I obtained the love of mine Aureola. For she loved me so affectionately, that I might judge her love to be of as great force as mine, though indeed it was of such nature, that it was divided between us both,

The Troublesome and Hard

both, I mean my brother and me, for we being so like one to other that we seemed to be but one, we could not shun reciprocation in love; but whosoever loved me could not but love him, and whosoever loved him could not but love me. And although I had certainly known that Aureola loved my brother equally with me, as well as I did but guessed that it was so, yet had I been nothing sorry, but rather rejoiced greatly that I had obtained so fair a Lady to be both my love, and my brothers friend. For in verity such was my affection towards him, that I could not wish any thing to my self wholly, without wishing part of it unto my brother, being most ready always willingly to part from any thing which I knew he wished, and with a good heart to cease and leave from desiring or wishing any such thing whatsoever he had a mind unto. But my brother marking that Aureola could not tell which of us two she loved best, or which of us was most worthy of her love, and thereby equally loved us both, was very sorry, fearing least, I might be grieved that I did not my self onely enjoy all the love of Aureola. And therefore he began to exhort me to seek means to be joyn'd unto her in marriage, thinking that so she should bee forced to withdraw her love from him, and wholly be addicted to me being her wedded husband. To effect which matter, he continually urged Aureola to make promise of marriage unto me very forcibly perswading her thereto; and telling her that I who thought my life no life but in respect of hers, should never be able to live perfectly untill such time that I being united and tied unto her in the knot of wedlock, might enjoy her as my wife: untill which thing were brought to passe, I should live a most lamentable life full of dolefull discontent.

Furthermore he promised her, that if she would vouchsafe to condescend to my honest desire, and his earnest request, he would move the King and Quene to deale with her after the Countesse, and her other friends, about the contracting this marriage, and obtain their good will and consent thereto. Aureola, although she was very unwilling to do so, yet

Adventures in Love.

yet because he should not think that she would not grant my request for that she equally loved him with me, seemed to grant our request, and to be willing to have the marriage contrived between her and myself. Yet she would not have any mention made of it unto any of the Court till three moneths were ended, for certain respects which moved her to conceal the matter so long. Which were none other (as afterwards we knew by experience) but such as proceeded from her own unwillingness to be tyed to me, and so to be deprived of the love of my brother. For it afterwards was manifested, she so loved us both that she wished in her heart, that she might have been married to us both; thinking that she should not perfectly have enjoyed one of us, if any other woman had been married to the other judging that we were both but one, and ought not to be separated. And therefore above all things did she desire that she were beloved of us both. Seeing we were both engraven in her heart, that she might not think of the one, without remembering the other.

But my brother thinking that Aureola had a bonney purpose after the time of three moneths expired, to marry with me, made me glad with the news which he brought me of her mind, although himself therewith was utterly spoiled of his felicity and welfare, which I came to know by this means.

It happened even upon the expiring of three moneths, on a certain morning betime, that I rising something early, walked abroad in the fields without the City, to a little wood not far off, to recreate my self with a solitary walk, being as it were wearied with the turbulent multitude of people, both Citizens and Courtiers. Which wood, when I had but even entered, me thought I heard one sorely lamenting his estate. and by the voice knowing that it was my brothers, I listened very attentively to know the cause of his complaints, whom I heard thus to cry out against fickle fortune.

Yea, Fortune, yea, Thou art Mistress, and wilt be Mistress, Philoreus must testifie the same, and register in the

The Troublesome and Hard

bottomne of his heart, that he was born to be crossed by Fortune. I thought that the Gods had forbidden thee to be me any more, but I perceiue thou wilt do what thou wilt, though heaven deny. But accursed mayest thou be of heaven, earth and hell; for so denying mortal wights, that thou seemest to have no Deity, but such as is procured by the glory which thou takest in making men miserable. Yet why do I so blame Fortune, seeing that if another man were in my case, he would think himself infinitely beholding to her, in causing all things to fall out so agreeing to his humour. For thou lovest Aureola, how much thou knowest; then seeing thou hast had sufficient token of her love towards thee, and considering that he that loveth desireth nothing so much as mutually to be loved of her whom he doth love. how canst thou complain of Fortune?

Again, when your mind was such that you wished her to be wholly your brothers, and desired that she should be his wife, you see all things happen to your pleasure, considering that Aureola hath promised to marry her self to him, and yet you will will exclaim against Fortune: all this is true. But the Hag doth let all things fall out according to my mind. knowing that in doing so she doth most torment me. For she hath made my life so miserable, that no content can be harboured in my disquiet breast, being the very habitacle of restless thoughts.

And in this thing is y^e means which she useth in verryng me contrary to all other mishaps and evils, in that she vereth me with effecting those things the effect of which I most wish for and desire. Which thing how strange it is I leave to the consideration of those that have the use of their wits, seeing by fortunes envie I am my self deprived of that benefit. Alack, what shall then poor Philoreus do, seeing he is so entangled in the love of Aureola, that he must either die or infor her as his own: and yet so loveth his brother (who cannot in like manner live if separated from the same Aureola) that he will die a thousand deaths rather then be disloyal to him. Die therefore Philoreus, die; and seeing there are not as wel two Aureolas as the
the

Adventures in Love.

there be two Philorenus's, make thy self lifeles and thy brother happy, he being one Philorenus alone, and enioying one onely Aureola. And put case thou wert dead, Philorenus, and dead for no other purpose but to make thy brother happy in the highest degree, oh how sweet a death would such a death be unto thee ! But yet thou mightest be deceived ; for thou knowest, nay so knowest that thou canst not doubt, but that, that life will be but a bitter life unto him, thou being without life. and so thou mightest by thy death procure to him either a bitter death, or a life worse then any death. What then resteth thrice miserable wretch, if that thou canst neither live to thy mind, nor die to thy mind ? Die living and live dying, and yeeld thy heart to receive each print of grief; that thou mayest always die, being torn with tormenting pain, and yet never be dead, least thy plague rebound from thee to thy brother : and therefore I bid thee farewell Aureola, farewell, my brother must enjoy thee, and I must suffer you both.

After that he had so shut up his complaint as if he had signed it with the seal of death, he fell down on the ground, being unable to stand on his feet any longer, & there he lay struggling as if soul and body would have parted, so strong and vehement was the pang that pinched him. Inso much, that although I was loath to shew my self unto him there, lest he should know that I had heard and seen him, yet compassion becoming master amongst my affections, for that he needed help in that case, forced me to runne happily to him to aid him. But he no sooner espied me but leaped up again so suddenly that if I had not both seen and heard his former shrikes and cries, I would have surely been perswaded that he did but shew me a tumbling trick, and that he had been exercising his body to some acts of nimblenesse.

And besides also, before I could salute him by reason that I so marvelled at the strangenesse of his change, he spake unto me so chearfully that I could scarce answer him for admiring at y^e force which his love towards me had suddenly procured him. His legs were scarce able to hold his body, and seeing me

The Troublesome and Hard

his heart commanded them to support him, his eyes which were so hidde with the tears which he shed, that no man could have seen them, as soon as they beheld me, seemed to have recalled the floods that came out of them and to have in a moment swallowed them up, and his face which did as it were swim in tears, seemed to drink up the moisture at my coming, as the morning dew vanisheth in the presence of Phoebus, when he sendeth his golden beams from his fiery chariot, to cherish the pleasant fruits of the earth after they have wept, by reason of the dark coldnesse of the mirthlesse night. Wherefore I seeing that my brotherly brother was so loth to make me acquainted with his passions, onely because he would not give me occasion of grief, but kept it all to himself; I dissembled as much as I could, lest I should by letting him know what I knew, quite discomfort him, and truly make him comfortlesse. And although by reason of that which I knew of him, pity caused such grief in me for his discomfort and passionate torment, that I think if he had not been in place, I had sunk to the ground, for a stronger foundation to hold up my distracted body, oppressed and weighed down by the heavynesse of passing sorrow, then my legs, which seemed to shake like the pillars of a Church that is falling, yet neverthelesse for that time, I plucked up my spirits and though not so well able as he, yet as well as I could I dissembled my passion, and answered him as chearfully as possibly I might, entertaining him with such talk as I thought most expedient, to cause him not to misdoubt of any thing. Insomuch that he neither thought that I had heard him, nor knew that I felt the pain which he himself suffered. And after we had there waiked an half hour or thereabout, we returned both of us together to the Court. And as we passed by the Countesse Verina's Garden, he espied the Countesse walking all alone, whereupon he began to urge me, in any case not to let that occasion slip, but that I should go unto her, and make her acquainted with the love and affection between me and her sister Aureola, and that he would go with me to bear me company,

Adventures in Love.

pany, and to perswade the Countesse to consent to the contracting of a marriage between me and Aureola. He said furthermore, considering the three moneths which Aureola appointed to have the matter during that time concealed, were expired, he had the day before spoken with the King concerning this matter, and that his Majesty had promised him to be wholly ours in this point, as he had ever before been in many other; and besides told him some things which he should make relation of to the Countesse, concerning this match. And to tell the truth, he grew so importunate to have me go to the Countesse in all haste, that I knew not how to shift off this readinesse. But because I had purposed to bring that to passe which I will by and by shew unto you, I found this excuse to delay our conference with the Countesse; that mistress Aureola for certain causes had urged me to promise her, that I would not speak unto her sister concerning any thing touching her, before I forewarned her, or let her know both that I would do it, and the time when I would do it. Which promise (quoth I) being passed, I may not break it.

Whereupon he well contented, seemed to take my excuse so well, that he rather liked of my unwillingnesse to go to the Countesse, then persevered to perswade me thereunto. So that we went both to my lodging, where we began to read certain chronicles of the ancient estate of Italy; things done in times past in the Kingdome of Naples, to be away the rest of the time till dinner were ready, that we might have some ancient history or other to delight the King and the Queen withall while they dined. For they took such delight in hearing their predecessors deeds and sayings, that we could not have done them a greater pleasure then to rehearse either some pretty saying, or some other worthy act of such Kings or Queens as had before them swayed the scepter of Naples. But not to be that which I am loath to be, I mean tedious unto you (noble Princes and Shepherds,) I will hasten to that which I even now promised to let you know, concerning that which I had certainly of ripe counsell in my heart concluded

The Troublesome and Hard

to do, after I knew by my brothers passions that he himself loved Aureola, and yet continually furthered my desire to his uttermost part.

For indeed I was fully resolved to leave Aureola unto him and my self to the hazard of fortune, and being so resolved, I performed no less.

CHAP. XXXIII.

How Philoreus the elder, secretly left the Court of Naples; and how his brother and Aureola went to seek him severally.

The next morning I departed very secretly from the Court, for Cinqueni, thinking to inquire whether I might hear any thing of my father, and to be certainly informed whether he were slain among the other unhappy inhabitants, or by hap fled, and so avoided the furious slaughter which many suffered. But before I departed, on the cover lid of a looking glasse that was in my brothers chamber window, I wrote him this farewell,

I Philo * to * Renus.

THou which to deck, by workman formed art,
Serve to unfold the cause which made me go:
And without leave, my brother leave and part,
From Court, wherein my onely joy doth grow.
Love bad me to enjoy my love and stay,
And love commanded me to go away.

Self-love would have me stay and means procure,
Loading my self with grief my self to ease:
considering therefore well the matter sure,
Self-love doth bid me go my self to please.
For who else is my brother, but my self?
And tendering him, right tender I my self.

Then

Adventures in Love.

Then know my self the cause which made me part;
Was love which warned me from love to cease;
For of two loves my heart felt double smart,
One love gave place that the other might increase.
Injoy thine Aureola, for I am gone,
And therefore gone, that she should be thine own.

After my brother had missed me, marvelling where I should be so long, he went to his chamber to drive away the time, and to deceive the tedious hours with some kind of reading exercise, thinking that I had been somewhere abroad in the fields in my solitary haunt, and that I would ere long return to the Court. And leaning on his window, he chanced to spie something written on the cover-lid of his looking glasse, which he might easly do, by reason that I had written with red ink the lid being of white ivory. And so taking it in his hand, he read the verses which I had left there to yeeld a reason for my sudden departure. But he being ravished into admiration, and by admiration led into astonishment, fell in an extasie. Which extasie, he being by himself alone, and therefore deprived of help, in such a case required had almost brought him to his last home. Yet after he had a long time lain in a trance, he came at last to himself again and then began to curse and rail at fortune, for dealing so partially with him in revealing that unto me, the revealing of which onely could make him miserable. Insomuch that now he knew that which before he not once mistrusted, to wit. that I the other morning had in the wood heard him lament his ill fortune, whereby I knew that which I also never dreamed of concerning his loving of Aureola. But so grievously did he take my absence, that all his body received the disposition that is caused by a disquiet soul; and his face became the very subject of sorrow, his countenance being mournfull and his eyes being grown to be the very seats of tears. Insomuch that whereas no man as yet could suspect or dream that I should be so gone

The Troublesome and Hard

as I was, yet seeing him so wofully fashioned, straightwayes
I judge that he could not be so altered but upon such a cause:
and whereas they should have known that he was so distem-
pered by reason of my so being gone, they contrarily knew of
my being gone by reason that he was so distempered. To be
short he was so tortured by the Butchers of Greece that he was
almost deprived of his wits and the use of his understanding:
and the rather, because he was brought in doubtfull resoluti-
on, whether he should leave Aureola and follow me, or leave
me and comfort Aureola; lest ranging after me through un-
known places, he should both lose me and himself also. He
therefore being drawn now to this conclusion, now to that,
hung in the air hovering between heaven and earth not know-
ing whether he were best by flight reach to the one, or by fal-
ling come to the other. So that his mind being thus suspend-
ed, he perpended the reasons for both parts, which were most
forcible to perswade him to the one or the other; yet in such or-
der, that neglecting fully his own case, as one altogether care-
less of his own welfare, he referred all matters to the effecting
of that which seemed most expedient and necessary to make
me happy, and to work my felicity. Inasmuch, that he began
to consider, that if chance he should have left Aureola, and com-
mit himself to the laboursome seeking and uncertain finding
of me, the loving Gentlewoman might have taken the absence
of us both so heavily, that she might have thereby fallen into
some desperate sickness, and perchance remediless. Well
(quoth he) put the case should die, were it not better that she
should die, then that I should suffer my brother to live in de-
spair, to run round about the world, to carry hell with him
wheresoever he goeth, having his affections like furies and
fiends, tearing & rending his brotherlike heart, to irritate the
barren ground with millions of tears, to disturb the guiltless
air with lamentable shrieks & cries, accompanied with sighs
and sobs, and in a word to be always dying, and yet never die?
Death is the lock that shutteth up misery and endeth all cala-
mity and trouble, If Aureola then die, O happy she! but un-
happy

Adventures in Love.

happy I! Pay my sweet brother, thrice unhappy thou. For no doubt if Aureola should die, the pain which thou wouldst sustain, the grief which would molest thy soul, and the torment which would ravish thee in the very gulph of all vexation, would so far in extremity pass the anguish wherein thou now dost pine, that it would be greater then the pain which causeth the soul to depart from the body. Why then I will rather remain by Aureola, and so both save her life, thine and mine own, though scarce mine own, seeing that I shall scarce be able to live, he being absent. And what will he think, nay what will all the world say but that I (forsooth) for love of my brother, entertain his love and that I so love him, that to shew my love towards him, I must needs love his Lady, and so defraud him of that wherein his chiefest felicity consisteth; the jewel of his heart, the treasure of his desires, the object of his delight, the subject of his conceits, the hold of his hope, & the onely and chief pillar of his life, and cause of his being, sweet Aureola, worthy to be all this unto him, he deserving to be as much unto her, none of them both owing less one to the other.

As he was thus quite turning from that mind to the other, and resolving to leave all to follow me, the beams of Aureolæ beauty reverberating the window wherein he lay musing what he might best do, warned him, that that Sun was in the garden whose light was able to strike with the Rays of Phoebus for force, seeing that his beams may well shine upon men, not in them; whereas y bright lines that glister from the golden forehead of Aureola did penetrate mens bodies, and shine, not upon them onely, but also within them and through them.

He therefore espying Aureola walking in the garden alone, wept that he saw not me with her. saying, O sacred powers of heaven, seeing that your Deities have been divinely worshipped by me since my Cradle why hate ye poor Philoerius your Servant so, that the sight which ought to be unto his eyes as gold to the covetous man, is unto him as popson to them that wish to live long? Not for that I take any disgrace by the gracious presence of Aureola, but that my joy is eclipsed, when

The Troublesome and Hard

I behold her without him by her, who seemed boyn to be inseparably joyned with her as white unto snow cold to ice and to use a moze familiar comparison, as beauty to Aureola. Having so said, as carried away with a sudden strong gale of wind he hasted to the garden and having passed the courtesies used in salutation and græting being asked for me (for she knew him by reason of a secret token which we had given to her onely to discern him from me and me from him) he up and told her all the matter concerning my sudden departure, yet so colouring the cause thereof, that she thought that I was gone, because I despaired that she should love him better then me. For he thought, that so she might be moved to pity, and by pity to sharpen her affection, which should have encreased her love towards me. Whereas if he had let her know the true cause of my absence, that I was gone to leave her to be his, she might have been moved to disdain me, which disdain should have nourished the fire which was kindled in his brest by the affection which she bore him, and so might she have allured him to to leave me in my pilgrimage, and enjoy her to displease whom he did count it a sacriledge.

But she construing of the matter as my most carefull brother and his brotherlike carefulness enformed and being subject to that custome which by nature is an unseparable companion to the desires of all women, I mean to wish and covet that which seems most impossible, and to long for such things as cannot be gotten, or very hardly had: now she heard that I was gone no man knew where, whereas besore her love inclined rather to my brother then to me, she was so ravished with desire to be with me, that she presently concluded to her self in heart, to take the pains to seek me: and although she did conceal the same unto him, and dissembled the passion which she felt by reason of my absence, by words whilst he was by her; yet by deed she sufficiently afterwards shewed it unto all the world.

For after shee was sepatated from him by the hastines of her resolution to execute that which she had purposed, she
went

Adventures in Love.

Went to her chamber, where after she had made her handkerchief drunk with sipping up and drinking in the tears which abundantly issued from out her eyes. most fertilly yielding fruit of the seeds of sorrow sown in them; and having astonished the stones and walls with the admirable tricks, and mobbed the lifeless pictures that hung in her chamber to pity, she impoverished her rich apparel by laying it off, and enriched her sisters Cooks wives pwo cloaths, putting them on her i-voy body, and so making provision of nothing but a knife to conquer Fortunes envy, if chance she would go about to make her miserable in the highest degree, by prolonging her life, when as she could not live but discontented, she committed her self to her journey, and her journey to the Gods, calling up on their Deities to be directed in her way.

O ye sacred powers (called she) that in heaven take care of us poor mortals, who wholly depend upon your favour or dis-favour, if ever my vows have been acceptable unto you, and my offerings pleasing, let me now have you tender my case, and pity my estate.

For if I have not of wicked wantonness or idle lusts framed self a fit subject for love, and made my mind a Tennis-court for the balls of fancy to be tossed to and fro in it, but rather have been conquered by the force of not to be resisted love; then allow me to love and maintain my love in spite of Fortune. Let your imperial power command the winds by their blasts to guide my steps, and by my steps to bring my body to the blessed place that is made happy by the excellent burden of my vertuous Philoreus. O then lusty coachmen of the stately sky, in whose heavenly body are great hidden Deities, let thy cherishing beams exhilarate no place but that which serveth to support the weight of my wofull and heavey Philoreus, therefore heave because mine: that so thy corruscant Rays falling down as a Golden shower of Rain over him, may be as a token and a mark whereby I may direct the course of my voyage. Lastly O ye Stars whose twinkling pride doth belovay the stateliness of the Grand Court and High Pallace

The Troublesome and Hard

made by nature, and challenged by the soveraign Gods, to be the habitacle and lodging for their Deities, help poore Aureola, help distressed her; and when Phoebus hath stabled his fiery horses all weary with daily toil, and put on you the charge of guarding and watching the sacred seals of heavenly powers, then take Chrysal wings to your fire body, and flie through the air unto my soules Philoreus, that as he shall understand by your comming, Aureola, even poore she is hasting towards him. so I, wretched I, (may most happy I, if ever so fortunate as once again to behold him the paragon of vertue and sole object of my conceits, following the light which environeth your bodies, may be brought unto him. even him. whose sweet self onely is worthy to be sought for of Aureola. Finally chaste and fair Diana, thou that knowest the purity of my thoughts and art acquainted with the furious assaults wherewith Cupid hath battered the bulwark of my chaste mind, and shaken the fort of my constant purpose to inviolable chastity; yet, O mighty Goddess, seeing that I have not filthily or dishonestly nourished fancy with shamefull hope of lust, but am rather overcome by such unresistable love, that if it had been attempted against some Goddess she had been forced to yield; I beseech thee to march before me in your secret night walks that being comforted by thy divine presence, I be not affrighted by the ugly grimness of the dark night, and so dissuaded, or rather discouraged to pass through woods and dales after my Philoreus. O sweet Philoreus, O beautifull Philoreus, O vertuous Philoreus! What wood is made so happy by thy mishap, as to shroud thy face so fair from scorching Apollo? What green is made so fortunate by thy misfortune, as to become the bed whereon thou dost rest thy wearied body? What lake is grown to be so blessed by thy curse, as to refresh thy tender stomach, falling down thy Alabaster throat into thy Marble belly? Blessed be that wood, that green and that lake which serveth for his scarff, his bed, and his drink; seeing that Nature hath wished, Fortune procured, and the Gods granted them that honourable favour.

Thus

Adventures in Love.

Thus Aureola invoking the Gods, and calling upon heaven, betook her self to her uncertain journey. She wist not which way to go, nor whither to go, but went being guided with love and accompanied with hope. In the mean time my brother having been informed that she was secretly departed the Court, staid not to hear what rumours were spread abroad in the Court of her going, but lest he might be accused of negligence and carelessness of the welfare of so good a brother, incontinently went from Naples, but so that he took his leave of the King and Queen, promising to return, his brother being found, unto them again; having acquainted them with the true cause of my so leaving the Court without even any of their Majesties knowledge.

Thus you see (Noble Princes and Shepherds) how those whom Nature seemed to have made to live together and be as one, were now by fortune separated so far asunder, that there was little (I will not say hope, for every one of us were pricked forward with the spur of hope, being warmed with desire, but) likelihood in reason that ever we should see one another again.

CHAP. XXXIII.

How Aureola came to see the Shepherds Pastoral Solemnities, hoping to find Philoreus there.

NOW Aureola understanding by a shepherd, that about four days journey from Cinqueni, there was a most solemn feast to be celebrated by the shepherds of that whole Country, to the honour of their God Pan, within three or four days after that she heard of it; wherefore she knowing that I very greatly delighted to be at those Pastoral Solemnities, and considering that the report of the same feast was so famous, and the rumours thereof spread so general, hoped that it might be her good luck to find me there, supposing

The Troublesome and Hard

supposing that I being warned of the feast to be kept, by the rumor and talk of the shepheards and being led by the delight which I take in such pastimes, would have come thither to recreate my sorrowfull and distressed mind, with the pleasant sport of the shepheards that celebrated the feast of their God. But she was frustrated of that hope, for coming there she could not hear any thing of me. She arrived there just upon the principal feast day in the morning, where the shepheards and shepheardesses being in number many, gathered there by reason of these solemnities, first went all of them into a temple dedicated to Pan, where after they had mumbled I know not what kind of rural service for their pastoral God, they came all out again and fell a dauncing and singing; untill such time that Phœbus being raised to the full height of his course, hanging right over their heads, they were warned by the messengers that he sent from his burning chariot, that they should shun the heat of his fiery beams, & under the roof of their barns shrowd themselves from his scorching rays. Where they fell to their meat and plied Bacchus and Ceres so well, that in Aureola's opinion they might have held a second feast the next day for their honour. After they had sufficiently recreated or refreshed themselves with all manner of delicacies used in the countrey, they hied to the temple again, where passing the time as they had done in the morning, some kind of afternoon ceremonies added, at length towards evening they returned to their dancing again. Where, in a fair green being walled in, with most stately Cedars, yeelding a more then pleasant shadow by reason that the Sun did cast his beams liberally against the sides of these trees, halting to his Western Court, they met all together. The grasse, was thick under foot, thick and hoyst, as green as greenesse it self, and so bescrewed with all kinds and colours of small flowers, that it seemed rather a fustcloth laid there for the Gods to passe over it with their divine feet, then a pavement for homely shepheards to track up and down in. Now over head were divers long chains, made of no other thing but flowers, so cunningly

Adventures in Love.

mingly twisted and woven together, that the sight of them passed the gallant Ibozy in show, and seemed rather to be ropes of Rubies, Pearls, and Diamonds, and all other kind of Gems and precious Lapidaries, then lines knit of flowers. These chains were crosse wise laid, one overthwarting the other, being many of them in number, and divers in making, and were fastened to the upper branches of the tall Cedars that grew about the same Paradise.

In the middlest and very centre of these lines and chains, hung by three brace chains wrought after the same manner, a most gallant garland with a fair lawzel bush hanging by one line under it, so artificially knit and twisted that both the garland and the bush with the lines by which they were fastened, seemed to be wrought by the fine fingers of Diana, and either cast down from heaven unto them, or brought thither by the nymphs of that Country, who had so beautified that place for the shepherds to solemnize their feast day according to the worthinesse and excellency thereof. The garland was to be taken off by him of the enamoured shepherds that could say best for his love, and by him to be given unto her: and the lawzel branch was to be taken down by her of the loving shepherdessees that boze away the praise of best dancing, and by her to be presented unto her swart heart. In omuch that Aureola desirous to see the proceedings of the country youths in their shepherd-like pastimes, was a spectator amongst them, though longer then the desire she had to see me could patiently allow her, yet till she saw both their dancing and their singing ended. There were about a dozen or half a score of the most choise and select shepherdessees of all that country and part of Italy, being daughters to the richest farmers thereabout, which maids being all heavenly beauty and contending fairnesse, each purchasing praise even with silence, among them danced for the lawzel bush. Which sight but to Aureola, yea and to Aureola, save when she seeketh Philoreus, (said she when she rehearsed the sum of her adventures) could not but have been so delightfull and pleasant, that it would have
made

The Troublesome and Hard

made them forget themselves, much more their grief or sorrow. Besides, she remembered that the maid that won the lawrel was called Benedetta, daughter to the old shepheard Roscoe, sister to her sister the Countesse Verina, and she gave it to a young shepheard named Pardo, son to a rich and wealthy farmer of great credit, whose name Aureola knew not.

CHAP. XXXV.

The Verses of the shepheards, sung by them for the Garland, at their Pastoral solemnity, and how *Otto* obtained it.



His being done, all the maids, they as well that had been spectators as actors in the dance, sat down on the green, all orderly ranked, Benedetta as the Queen, placed in the midst of the row, and beheld the action of the young shepheards, who being far more in number that contended for the garland, then there had maids done for the lawrel, yet Aureola having her mind something too much busied with the cumbersome remembrance of me, could not so carry away all their names & verses, but that she forgot the greater part of them. But those which she remembered she imparted unto me, as I am ready to do unto this worthy company, seeing I have the papers yet in my pocket. The first shepheard that should have sung, was called Argalo, being a brave young youth, whose face seemed to be made by nature, to tell womens eyes that they should perswade their hearts that he was fair, and whose proportion was such as could not but delight. If any fault was in him to Aureola's judgment, it was that he sustained too stately a gate for one of his vocation, being an husband-mans or farmers son; for modest and low behaviour becommeth men of low birth; yet she told me that his proud erecting of his head and setting of his shoulders, his feet withall, marching as if he had lead a troop of foot-men to muster, did (to her mind) as harbingers deliver their messages, that the inward loftiness
of

Adventures in Love.

of his mind was far greater then in shepheards is usuall.
These were his verses which he not sung, but with a moze
then pastozal grace uttered.

Argale.

A Pipe no worse then *Pans* sung *Fioras* praise,
Ioves thundering stile averred she was fair,
As *Venus* well agreed with lovely phrase,
And high *Diana* bravely did declare.

Fair *Fioras* name is written in the skie,
And there eternized shall never die,

The second youth that was ready to say something for the
winning of the garland, was called Porcio, and though he was
not fair skinned as the former, yet in Aureola's eye deserved
a much commendation for comelinese as he, yeelding a most
gracious sight to their eyes that beheld the making of his face.
These were his verses which he sung to a Citharen, used a-
mong the shepheards of that country. And it seemed by the
strangenesse of the tune, that not onely that which he sung but
also that which he played was of his composing, having made
both the matter and the musick. By which means he was
thought to be something well skilled in playing on his in-
strument. But O his voice! (said Aureola) it was either like to
Orpheus sweet note, or it was Orpheus voice it self, being
through many bodie, at length come within Porcio, according
as the Pythagoreans hold opinion of mens souls, that after they
issue out of their corruptible habitacles, they enter newely into
some other to maintain their eternity.

Porcio.

Iove rain'd, his shows were gold, but yet in vain,
Covetuous was *Daxac*, but *Bina* not,
For though whole worlds fell down of golden rain,

kk

Yes

The Troublesome and Hard

Yet *Bina* chaste, disdain would *Danaus* lot,

If Gods could vertue hate, vice to imbrace,

Vice she would shun, incur though their disgrace.

After this Porcio, were some shepheards that sung to the sound of a Harp, some the sound of a Viol, some to the sound of their corn-muse, whose vertues for that they were more passionate then passing, and seemed rather to be harbingers of love then of wit, being more pittifull then pithy, she heard them in like manner with a mind mollified with commiseration, unwilling to trouble her memory with the remembrance of the. But at length she spied a little short dapperdy, bustling to come among the rest with a paper in his hand, wherein his verses were written in such manner, that a man might have read them as fast on the backside of the paper, as he on the inside. But whether he had his paper, to assist his weak memory, or to shew his cunning that he could both write and read, *Aureola* knew not. His name was Polemon, and his verses were these: which he did not sing, but thwacked them out (looking in his paper) as if he would have dared *Radamanthus* that appointeth the shadows their pennance in hell from his infernal chair.

Polemon.

EVEN beauty it self is *Palla*, not beautifull, or fair,
If beauty any have, of her that all they do borrow,
Not white, but whitenesse: sweetnesse and comelines it self,
Not sweet, not comely: as yeelding that to all others
Of which they boast. 'Tis *Pallaces* list she to claim it,

Pert Polemon, came an old shepheard though never married, who thinking that he had offended Cupid to let his young and strong years slide and slip away, without doing him service, purposed to make amends by pining for love in his old days, for such a face had the fellow, and a body well befitting such

Adventures in Love.

such a face, that he might well love but never be loved, unless Cupid would be revenged of some Vesta minded maid for neglecting and despising his Deity, and so make her dance in the net of folly with this old lovelesse face, both of them crying Peccavi & penas domas. His name was Schalco, and as Aureola was informed by the shepherdes of the country, he most importunately made love to the fair shepherdesse Ura, daughter to one of the King of Naples farmers. Which maid so did hate him, that although he was most wealthy, having store and abundance of all manner of country riches, yet she thought her self discredited in that she was loved of him. These were his verses.

Schalco,

AS I my sheep by *Phæbus* fall went homeward for to drive.
He promised a gift full gay, ere long he would me give.
One of his golden beams shot from his chariot of fire,
Which I to *Vra* will present to be her winter fire.
Oh *Phæbus* crosse thy beams with silver lines, even latherwise,
That I with *Vra* might mount up, and dwell with her in skies:

Nert to old Schalco young Dorus, a pretty stripling to be chamberlain to Cupid, made haste to tell his tale, For as he was rival to Schalco, so he would not omit to say something that might please Ura. And therefore hoping by deriding of Schalco (whom he knew Ura could not abide) he thought to gain her favour. These were his verses.

Dorus.

IN skies old *Schalco* would with *Vra* dwell,
And ride with her in *Phæbus* golden coach
Where when on him she thinks death doth incroach:
And rather then with him would dwell in hell.

The Troublesome and Hard

Give her a winter fire, thou shalt do well,
But see thou burn thy bones by that same fire,
So will she love thee, which fith you desire :
Seeing not in skies, procure the same in hell.

One more beside this did Aureola mark, whom she there-
fore marked, because she judged him worthy to be marked.
He was called Otto, (and as she had heard) sonne to a Duke
in France, and passing through Italy to see the country saw the
fair shepherdesse called Laurea, of whose beauty and graces,
same had been very prodigall; and he having seen her with
liking, liked her with love, and loved her with constancy. In
somuch that to become hers, he ceased to be his own: and lea-
ving parents, land, honour, and living, became a shepherd to
win the love of Laurea, who once had told him that she might
fancy no higher then a shepherd. But oh heavenly Laurea,
(quoth Aureola) thy modesty was too great to be of base birth,
thy humblenesse too gracious to be of low parents. No, no,
nature hath not wzenged thy vertuous beauty, and beauty
made more beautifull by virtue, but fortune hath envied at
thy perfection. Thou wert found in the wood by eld Panteo,
who possesseth thee as his daughter, and whom thou for thy
bringing up dost reverence as thy father; why might not as
well hard-hearted Kings as poore beggars have left thee there
swaddled in base and poore cloaths? Insomuch that Aureola
was fully perswaded that Laurea, was some noble born maid,
though by fortunes hard intreatment she was not known
what she was. Neither did Aureola guesse amisse; for after-
wards it was well known that this Laurea was sister to the
Dukes son that loved her. It fell out after this manner.

There was great war between the King of Gaul, and the
Emperour of Greece. The King sent a mighty army into I-
taly, to be revenged of the Italians that had assisted the Em-
perour with men and money. Among many other Noblemen
that were in the Kings army, was Duke Otto this new be-
come shepherds father, with the Dutchess his wife, and young

OTTO

Adventures in Love.

Otto his onely son, being of two years old, having no more children then him. It chanced that the Kings army was overthrowen, and the Duke and all his retinue taken prisoners, saving the Dutchesse who was fled unto a certain wood being all alone, where after she had been one moneth nourished by a poor old woman that lived a solitary life in that wood, she was delivered of Laurea, whom she named Sylva, after the place where she was born. Within a week after the Dutchesse had bene brought a bed, died their good old hostess, to her great discomfort. But then she takes her child and thinking to march toward some village, she went from the cave about five miles, where she espied the village where Laurea was brought up. And pondering with her self how she might passe unknown, for that all the inhabitants of those countries were enemies to the King of Gaul, she layed her child down by a broom bush because she might go the lighter, meaning to go back to the cave and put on the dead womans cloaths and so to return again presently. But before she could reach to the Cave, she was met withall by a certain Italian Knight, who liked her so, that he secretly conveyed her to his house, notwithstanding that she most earnestly intreated her to let her first go fetch her young babe, which she had left but three or four miles off. For he mistrusted that she had but invented that excuse to delay the time, and fearing lest some other company might pass that way before she found the child, among his men carried her to his house. The same evening Phebus having inclosed his heat within his western tower, the old shepheard Panteo, according to custome, hied to the wood to fetch wood to warm his old limbs the next winter, with the fire he hoped to make of it; and so he found young Sylva, by him called Laurea. The Knight being importuned by the Dutchesse, sent his men to the wood to seek for her child, but they could not find it, & therefore could hardly believe but either she lyes, or some body else had taken it up. The Dutchesse was daily solicited by this Knight to yield her body to his pleasure, but she would not: he kept her close prisoner 8 years, & being expired the

The Troublesome and Hard

the knight being beheaded by the command of the Nobility of Italy, by reason of some trespass by him committed, and some kind of treason by him put in practice against the State of the countrey) she got away, and came to France, where she found her husband the Duke Otto, but not her son, the young Otto, who was sent by his father into Italy to studie at Padua, to learn the Italian language, and after three or four years space that he had been in Italy, he came acquainted with this Shepherdesse Laurea, towards whom he so hotly pursued his sute, that at length she condescended to be his wife. Whereof he was as glad as if he had gotten a Kingdome, speedily made a journey towards France, intending either to get his fathers good will to marry her, and fetch her home to his Countrey, or to provide as much money and jewels as he could get, and bid France and friends adieu. for that friend. But when he came home, and found his mother there, whom he thought to have been dead many years since, and heard her talk of her adventures, and many other things, how she had had a daughter, and he a sister, and might yet have had, had not Fortune too hardly dealt with her, even as soon as she was born, considering the circumstances of time and place, with other points concerning the matter, he found Laurea to be his own natural sister; Whereof he was glad for her sake, that she was not of base lineage, but sorry was he (I promise you) for his own part, that he might not enjoy that beauty which he so loved. But howsoever he took the matter, he rested not till he had by his fathers help and counsel, brought her home to her parents to the extreame joy of them all, and all their friends. Thus (noble Princes and Shepherds) have you heard the history of Laurea, briefly and verily reported, according as I have been informed since I came to the Lady Felicias Court. But because I will not forget to set down Ottos verses (by reason of which I made this digression in rehearsing his history) which he sung to the sound of a Lute being in Shepherds attire; for indeed he had a flock of Sheep in the next village, for the cause which I have above declared.

Otto.

Adventures in Love.

Otto.

JOve did mislike his stately *Ianos* pride,
Her Majesty to *Laurea* therefore gave,
Our lovely *Venus* did unchaste abide,
Whose beauty therefore *Laurea* must have,
Minerva had offended too I guesse,
For *Laurea* doth her learned wit possess.

Yet was there one more whom I had almost forgotten, the
shepherd Pardo, unto whom Benedetta had given the Lawzell
bush; for he hoped to get the garland, that he might have requi-
ted her curtesie, but it fell out otherwise then he expected, as I
will afterwards tel you. These were his verses, which he sung
with a most sweet voice passing by many degrees the common
manner of shepherds singing.

G. Pardo

THe Maid whose face is full of lovely grace,
Whose body without fault deserveth praise :
Whose speech most gracefull, fit for such a face,
Whose birth her inward veruees all bewraies.
Is Benedetta call'd, a blessed name,
Which far and wide is spread by flying Fame.

When Pardo had done, then was the garland to be given
to him that had done best following the judgement of 5 maids
that were present, by whose voices it was to be given. And
indeed, though Pardo came near it, by reason that the Quæ-
ren who had won the Lawzel. had four and twenty voices to give,
by reason of her dignity that day, which voices she gave all un-
to him for affections sake. (save one which she gave to Otto, be-
cause she would give some token of her mind that she thought
he deserved it, though none but Otto should have gotten any
away

The Troublesome and Hard

away from her loving Pardo) yet by reason that Otto had all their voices that contended in the dance for the Laurel with Benedetta, they having each of them half as many voices to give as Benedetta, because they had danced with her, where the others had but each of them their single voices, which also the most of them gave to Otto, few to Pardo. and some to Argale, who began the game ; it was Otto's chance that day to win the garland, which he had no sooner looked upon, but he wished it on his Mistress head and could no sooner wish it, but she being by, he performed the same but with such a grace, that all the shepheards and shepherdessees, whereas they were wont to envie at their King, yet then by force of his vertue were constrained to love him, and glory that they had so worthy a King to honour their solemnities ; the end whereof Aureola would not stay, seeing she had missed of that wished encounter which she hoped for.

CHAP. XXXVI.

How Aureola in her journey came to Yervedra ; how she was overtaken there by Philoreus the younger, taking him to be his brother Philoreus.



Before Phoebus had bidden the earth farewell with his weake countenance untill the next morning, Aureola purposed to reach to a certain village, where she had thought to rest that night, and at the early appearance of Aurora she intended to hasten on her journey.

But she being in those quarters, and ill acquainted with those ways, as not over-cunning in finding or going any way, happened to come to a fair path, which flanked the village on the right side ; the fineness of which way so liked her (as commonly all things that yeld but even a taste of pleasantnesse, or shew of beauty, present great pleasure and liking unto those that love) that she could not chuse but go that way ; which led her

Adventures in Love.

her quite past the village six or seven miles before she thought of the village, till being even benighted, she began to wonder that she had not reached to the place she hasted to, having so long travelled without staying or resting either body or mind. For indeed as she went her feet carried her mind so fast over a great deal of ground in a little space, that it forgot how to direct their pace to bring the Coach (her precious body) wherein it did ride, to the place where she had purposed to rest.

But now the knowledge of the place where she was being taken from her by reason of the darkness, which was a sorrowfull messenger (she being there alone without any company save mine in her mind) that Phoebus had with the obscure curtain of the night closed himself in his bed, with nothing to do; but protecting her body under a large branched tree, from the rain which then fell from the skies, even as tears, witnessing heavens sorrow for her mishap; she laid her tender body down upon the hard earth, which seemed to shake as panting for gladness of the sweet new burthen it did bear.

There she thought to repose her wearied body and grieved mind, hoping by sleep (the cause of forgetfulness) to make truce with her sorrowfull remembrance for a time. But her restless thoughts so waked in her, that however her body was at rest, in mind she travelled still on her quest after me. The night being past, and the morning approaching, she rose from her bed (soft in no respect but that soft she had lain there) and on she went, although she knew not whither, yet whither her feet (led with no certain guide, then Love and Fortune did carry her. And having coursed through Italy without hearing any thing of me, she visited the coasts of Spain; for she knew that I was born in these quarters, and so began to think, that I might be taken with a desire to take a view of my Country (which she resolved to go to, because it was my Country,) deploring her going so much, as that she had not the luck to see it, but wishing being but in it, and yet would she have counted that seeking out a pleasure if she might have found me, the end of her desires.

The Troublesome and Hard

But no, she sought and so sought that she left no place in the Kingdom of Aragon, which she had not seen or rather which had not seen her, and she could not hear so much of me, as whether ever I had been seen or heard of in that country before, being the place of my birth: the reason was, that I lived in exile with my father as soon as my feet had learned that they had no need of a bearer. But to be short, at length after many a troublesome journey, she came to the village where I was born, called Yervedra, where lodging one night in an old Farmers house, after she had made some enquiry after me, she learned that I was born in the same village: for that old Farmer remembered my name very well, though I think few others could have kept it in memory; but if she had known my fathers name, she had by inquiring for him sooner have come to Yervedra. Yet what was she the better: for when she knew that that was the place of my birth, and that she could not hear any thing of me there, then began her hope to fail, and to yield to despair, inasmuch that weary not so much of going any longer as living any longer, she wished either that she might find me or death. Yet thanking the old man as heartily and courteously as a civil guest may an old and friendly host, away she got from Yervedra thinking to go into Castile, and so to see the beautifulnes of that Kingdom which she had so much heard spoken of. But having paced about a mile from Yervedra, she entered into a little Wood, which was nothing either long or large or thick: but so pleasant a place, as that it seemed to be made by nature onely to delight the neighbours that dwelled thereabout. Yet could not this place of pleasure any thing at all mitigate Aureola's grief (now even bringing her to the gates of despair) but rather increased her sorrow. And where, as it was wont to be a place where many men came to delight and recreate their minds in unto her it yielded a memorandum of all her misfortunes and adversities; for no sooner had she entered into that place, but marking the pleasantness of it, she began to remember the unpleasantness of her own conceits; then began she to be sorry that she was so grie-

ved

Adventures in Love.

bed with sorrow; afterwards she became angry with her self in finding such humours; next to that she found fault with Nature for making her so imperfect as not able to resist such accidents. But at last, pausing at that chancing word accidents, she fell a railing at Fortune, calling her the sole and only mistress of all mischiefs that happen unto men.

And leaving her there, busie with her bitter invectives against Fortune (which she did as well as she could do, and could do as well as she would or list to do, being provoked thereto with such affections as anger and despight armed her withal,) I will in brief manner let you know, that after he had been in divers places and countries (having made more speed and hast in his search then Aureola) at length in the borders of France, it was his luck to meet with Laureia, first called Sylva, whose history I have shortly rehearsed, untill she was brought home to her fathers house by her brother Otto who had among the shepheards so long courted her, but the rest of her adventures she her self may declare unto this noble company, opportunity being offered. She being now in this house with the Lady Felicia. Yet thus much I must say of her (seeing it concerneth our history) that my brother having found her in the frontiers of France, in a desert all alone, very nigh in the same plight that Aureola was, at first when he saw her before he spake to her, doubted whether it was Aureola, for she was so drowned in tears, that indeed the judgement of the eye could little prevail at first sight, to discern what or who she was.

Nevertheless, greeting breiding parley, and parley knowledge, he found that she was some other Gentlewoman that was pinched with the same punishment that tortured Aureola's soul. But after long talk, they came to like one of anothers company so well, that they purposed to travel together into the Castilian region, over the bordering mountains betwixt France and Spain: Insomuch, that they came into Castile, before that Aureola had been in Aragon, where in the famous City of Civil, my brother was constrained to leave Laureia, she having been dangerously sick; yet before he departed from
her,

The Troublesome and Hard

her; she was so amended that danger of death was past; yet by reason of her weaknesse she was not like to be able to go on her journey in six or seven weeks after. So that he took his leave of her, promising her, that if he might make the course of his journey serve, so that he might within a moneth or twain return that way, he would come to her again, and so to her no small discomfort, parted from her; travelling towards Aragon, where he happened to passe through the wood where Aureola was lamenting her hard luck, and rayling at fortune for so hardly using her. Insomuch that my brother before he was by her eyed, had espied her a far off, and thinking certainly it had been some other kind of woman, for that she had but base apparel, having put on the Countesse her sisters maids cloaths, which he knew not, he went softly and used the bushes for a curtain to hide his body from her sight, that he might come so near that he might learn by her words what she was, for at the first sight he straight perceived that whosoever she was she bore the impression of a distressed mind in her face. And therefore listening to her cries, he heard her utter these or such like speeches, with her knife unsheathed in her hands.

IS this the world in which men strive to live?

Is this the life which men as pleasant love?

Is this the pleasure world and love doth give?

Is this the gift that age to wish doth move?

Age, life, world, pleasure, seek not to please me,

For I such gifts most poore account to be.

Life is a pain, shall I with thanks buy pain?

Life breeds my woe, shall I for sorrow wish?

Life is my losse, shall I account it gain?

Life hates my hap, shall I it call my blisse?

I loth to live, but more the life I live,

Sweet death unto my joys beginning give.

Adventures in Love.

Yet death you make no hast to pity me,
Whil't life the tyrant, still his part doth play,
And makes me grieve, and grieve to call for thee :
But I will make you both learn to obey.

Know, I your Mistresse am, who with one blow
Can teach you both your duties quickly know.

This is the wand that beateth life away,
This is the wink to which death comes in hast,
This is the cast that maketh double play,
This bringeth sweetnesse wrapt in bitter tast.
How sweet must Death needs be, since Life is sow'r
For contraries be of contrary pow'r.

My Brother knowing her by her voice, and hearing her desperate resolution, would not stay the end of her tragical Sonnet, fearing lest it might have brought unto his eyes too tragical a spectacle ; but stepping out of the bush behind her, as she was proceeding forward, beginning the next verse thus.

Death therefore now I call, and Death must come ;
I will not live more, therefore needs must die,
Why die I will die, ———

Which my brother thus interrupted, say rather sweet Aureola. let Philoreus die to redeem thee from death. She incontinently looking back and thinking that it was he for that she knew not certainly whether my brother had followed from Naples to seek either of us) fired her so dead. Fly in his face, that her soul seemed to issue out of her body through them to join it self unto him. For she sunk down, and the knife fel out of her weakned hands, her lips were knit, her tongue tied, her eyes turned her colour gone, her body as if it had been without life at all.

Which dismal sight so dismayed my brother, that unlesse provident Nature had strengthened him, where he so much
needed

the Troublesome and Hard

needed his force, he had certainly been in no better case then Aureola her self. But falling down by her he strived to wake her out of that unnatural kind of sleep, where with much ado he left her crush his hand between her thumb and her other fingers. While he pulled her sweet hand, to have some token of recovery. And at length obtaining the power of her sight again, turning her eyes towards him, she unsealed her fast closed lips, and with a sigh breaking the knots wherewith her tongue was knitted, she said; Ah Philoreus, why dost thou not revenge the injury offered thee, by her that is cause of thy exile? My guilty conscience accuseth me, and therefore crabe I pardon. My brother was so galled with that, because he knew that he was the onely cause indeed (though soe against his will) himself, which made me leave the Court, yea because he had told her that I was gone because she seemed to love him better then me, and perceiving that she now took him for me, purposed for her better comfort to hold her in that opinion: and therefore framed her this answer. Lovely Aureola, thou blamest thy self to make me blush who cannot, but be ashamed that I have put thee to all this trouble in taking so tedious and dangerous a voyage fraught with so much grief and sorow, and onely for my foolish and rash departure, being grounded upon no reason moving me thereto, but onely the force of my passions becoming masters over reason brought me to this absurdity, and thy self to this extremity, wherein I find you in this place, whither no doubt the Gods pittying your case, and hearing your vows, sent me to stay so pittifull and tragicall event as otherwise had happened. For the Gods themselves with tears of blood, would have deplored the death of such a heavenly person as is Aureola. Why then, what would all the world have done? what mourning would all mortals have made? had they been deprived of that beauty whereof men glory in the East and West, and where not? Ah sweet Aureola, what should miserable Philoreus, (nay and more then thrice miserable, being the cause and auther of so great losse) have done, who would have, nay doth yet think that

Adventures in Love.

ment neither in hell nor elsewhere. Would have been sufficiently extreame to punish his offence, in offering unto thee the world and himself, such wrong. Whereupon Aureola replied; No no, my heart, thou canst not offer me as much, unless it be in doing thy self injury. For I for my part am to thee I am not thine, but thy self. I am not any more Aureola, separable from thee or any other distinct person different unto thee, but I am even thine own self. And therefore in hurting thy self thou mayest harm me, not else.

But here may we leave them (noble Princes and Shepherds) talking together of their adventures hapned to each in their journey, noting this (as I have already admonished) that Aureola knew not but that she was with me, and that it was I that came so happily unto her in her uttermost extremity. For my brother to comfort her (though so doing he did me displeasure, seeing that I rather wished him that happiness then my self) still dissembled, not revealing unto her who he was, and suffering her to delight her self in that pleasing opinion, thinking she enjoyed my presence which she than wished for above any other in the world, yea and above his own, whom she before seemed to love better then me? Which her change, did so tear his loving and brotherlike heart, that he was pestered with incredible grief, and yet gloried in himself that the matter succeeded so well for me, wishing for nothing else but that he might find me, to give me Aureola, and to see us married. For he doubted not but he might use such means, that if ever he could find me, she should not know but that it was he whom they jointly together sought, and not I. For whereas Aureola very earnestly urged him to return to Naples to be married, my brother to hinder that purpose spake thus unto her. I have been said he by certain Shepherds informed, that my brother (you must consider gentle reader, that this is spoken of himself and so to be understood, seeing he is now of Aureola taken for me, in which opinion he did continue her) after he had let you know of my sudden departure, and afterwards had heard that thereupon you were gone secretly

The Troublesome and Hard

cretly from Naples to seek me, he in like manner taking his leave of the King (having of his Majesty license thereto) left Naples and pursued his quest after us both. Wherefore (said he, dear Aureola, let us first seek my, nay our dear beloved brother, that we may all three together return to the Court, and so have our marriage feast celebrated in full joy, no cause of sorrow eclipsing our mirth. Which perswasion printed so good a liking in her heart, that he obtained the same of her: she being ready to go any where, so she went (as she thought) with me. Here (noble Princes and Shepheards) seeing the Lady Felicia expected our coming to supper. Will to morrow or some other time, whensoever it shall please your worthinesse to hear the rest, opportunity being thereto offered.

The Dutchesse Busil with the other Ladies, Gentlemen, and Shepheards thanking Philoreus assured him that he had done them a pleasure more then mean, in that he had taken so much pain as to delight them with that rehearsal of his own fortunes promising that he should find them as ready to pleasure him. But the Dutchesse above the rest, told him that she hoped as he had begun to delight her with the beginning of his history, so he would work the perfection of her delight so begun, with the end of the same, occasion presenting time and place fit for the purpose as he had promised. And therewith they went altogether into the palace, where the Lady Felicia meeting them at the garden doore, most courteously saluting them, being by them saluted, first the Dutchesse Busil, old Eugenio next, then Marcelio and his Alcida, with her brother Polydor and his sister Clenarde, and so Alexander with his Ilmenia, and then Philoreus with his Petulca, and the rest of the company: which courteously finished, she led them all into a fair stately hall, most sumptuously and gorgeously furnished, where the cloth was laid, for that the evening bringing something too cold an air with it, she thought it better to sup there then in the bower in the garden, where they had dined. While supper continued, the Nymph Arcthea sung this sonnet to the sound of her Lute.

Arcthea

Adventures in Love.

Arethea.

MY song is love, yet strange love, not mine own;
And though I love not, yet my tongue will spend
In praise of love, though many that alone
Which theirs is, will vouchsafe for to commend.
But now my thoughts from passions being free,
My words as true as truth it self shall be.

Love is the thing through which all men have being,
Love is the thing which mankind doth preserve:
Love is the cause of heavens and earths agreeing,
Love is the Lord whom Gods and men do serve.
Love is the knot which sexes doth unite,
Love in estate maintaineth every wight.

Love is the tool which finest wits doth file,
Love unto worthy things mens hearts doth bind,
Love frames the tongue to use a flowing stile,
Love is the touchstone of a vertuous mind.
Love is the spur to valorous exploits,
Love doth exalt thy mind to heavenly thoughts.

Love is the joy wherein Lordings delight,
In Love do Ladies think the time well spent:
In all, is love a comely courteous sight,
In men a grace, in maids an ornament.
All this of Love, and more, if more may be,
I know, though nothing Love doth know of me.

Arethea having ended her Sonnet, the Lady Felicia asked Perierio how he liked it and whether he thought not, that lovers were beholding unto her for so extolling the Saint that ruleth their affection. But he framed her this answer. Divine Lady, your Pymphs Encomion of love, hath so sweetly toucht mine ears, that they most willingly and readily carried the meaning of her speeches to my mind, who receiving them with no lesse delight, was moved to think so well of

The Troublesome and Hard

them that it now comandeth my tongue to let you understand. And in truth Madam, as I am glad that I now love not, in respect of divers circumstances so I should be singularly sorry if I thought I should never love again. And more directly to answer your question, I think my self not a little beholding to Arethea, for esteeming so much of Love, onely for that I have once loved; much more think I, will such as now feel the fire of fancy growing in their hearts, make account of her, for making such account of that wherein they have placed their chief felicity.

CHAP, XXXVII,

The dispute which happened between Perierio and the Duchesse Brissil, occasioned by the Song of the Nymph Arethea, in commendation of Love.



ALl the company hearing Perierio speak in this manner, marvelled at the same; for they knew nothing how the Lady Felicia had used him in her study, by giving him the drink of oblivion: And therefore they were amazed to see Perierio, a man before so full of melancholy, and so pathological, now so freely speak of Love, as one not now in Love, whereunto he was before so earnestly addicted, & he seemed to be bound apprentice unto it for ever. But among the rest the Lady Brissil spake unto him in this manner, But I pray you sir, you that ere while so furiously loved, are the hot fires wherein you so madly flamed already quenched? yet they seemed unextinguishable. I think they be, fair Princess (answered Perierio) for they are not quenched but allayed: and in this degree it is that I commend love, and no doubt but Arethea so thought of it when she so effectually describe it. Yet am not I of y opinion, answered the Duchesse, for that were neither hot nor cold; whereas if love should do and cause all those
worthy

Adventures in Love.

worthy things which Arethea attributeth unto it, no doubt it
 must be extended to some extreme point: or else how should it
 be able to work so many excellent matters as she speaketh of,
 may rather as truth it self aberrereth even by the mouth of all
 such as know the excellency of love? You say well (quoth Perie-
 rio) but yet I hope you will likewise grant that as in all o-
 ther vertues, so in love also there may be an extremity in ex-
 cesse, which is a vice, and not to be defended. An extremity
 (quoth Brissil) I grant in this, that one may love too coldly, but
 too hotly one cannot, in my mind. For seeing love is com-
 mendable as none here gainsay it; the more one doth love, the
 more doth he that which is worthy of commendation, how shall
 we then blame him as doing that which is vicious? For love
 is not to be considered as liberallity or other vertues; for be-
 ing too easie in giving and bestowing, as more then one is
 able he falleth from liberallity, and cannot be accounted to be
 liberall but prodigall: in that he lavishly maketh havock of
 more then his ability well can allow or reason perswade him.
 But love the more it possideth man, the more he loveth, and
 the more he loveth, the more he possideth. For though by be-
 ing liberal without measure, that ability waineth, and riches
 decay, yet by loving how extraordinarily soever, love never
 wareth lesse, nay increaseth. For the more one loveth, the more
 still doth his power to love grow, and the more able doth he
 become to love. And so long cannot he fall from love and be
 accounted no lover, as they that by too much spending fall
 from being too liberall to become prodigall. Nay but (quoth
 Perierio) by loving without reason do we fall from love to
 madnesse; for frantick I account that love which is not gui-
 ded by reason. By reason! (quoth the Dutchess) why love is
 too noble a thing to be tied to any respect either of reason or a-
 ny other thing whatsoever. For love being considered in it self
 is a certain kind of motion of the mind, which moveth of it
 self, and will not be subject unto any part of the mind; and I
 hold opinion that reason is governed of love, and not love gui-
 ded by reason. For when love hath once taken hold of the heart

The Troublesome and Hard

when it thinketh good, it calleth for the counsell and assistance of reason; but otherwise it will not wait or attend upon reason to be directed by it. Neither do I judge them to be reasonable lovers that in love take counsel of reason, or go about to love with reason. For they that love indeed, unless they do many ways surpasse that which reason teacheth them, or do more then by reason they are moved to do; I think their love to be but of a small account, and scarce to be called love. And not to fetch any instance a far off, but even from your self, if you had not left your father and your sisters (as I have heard you say) to seek the Lady in whose beauty your soul danc'd, and forsaken your country (for so I call the place where your dwelling was planted) to travel through desert places and unknown regions, to find out her who was cause that you lost your self; no doubt you would not have thought that you had loved; nor any man else would have said that you had done so. And yet if you had hearkened to reason undoubtedly you had not left your aged father and comfortlesse sisters deprived of your company, to seek the company of the Lady who fled your company; for reason would have conducted an whole army of arguments to dissuade you from that enterprise, which would have been nothing else but to force you to cease from love. For certainly had you stayed at home, you had either not loved at all, or at least but very little been troubled with passion. Inasmuch that you see how that reason and love cannot agree together, for they are opposite enemies one to the other. And therefore I cannot see what love it is that y^e say y^e would have guided by reason. That love Madam (quoth Perierio) which I onely account love, and not I onely, but all such as will not disgrace the excellency of so worthy a thing as love is. For to let you know how I would have love guided with reason I understand the matter so, that I would have them that love, therein to shun such inconveniences as breed shame, infamy, and reproach unto them that love, if they be not avoided. As to love that which ought not to be loved, as Pasiphae loved the Bul by whom she bore Minotaurus, many other things which

Adventures in Love.

which might be considered, which enely can be judged by the rule of reason. Besides, I remember many that describe love, (whose descriptions I like not for my part) say, that love is full of dissembling hypocrisie, strife, debate, brawling, vice, offence, quarrelling, envy, hate, sealeusie murther, prodig life, greedinesse, covetousness, anger, and many other mischievous inconveniences: which I think one that loves may very well avoid all, I mean by the help and counsel of reason, which tells us that they ought to be shunned.

Why but good sir (quoth the Dutcheſs) that love whereof you talk is not love, but lust, the gulph of all mischief: for lust is subject to all such vices, and more; but not love. Why then (inferred Perierio) must you grant, that love not limited by reason, is lust. Nothing so (quoth the Dutcheſs:) for love in the very nature and essence thereof considered (otherwise it is diversly taken) is a knot or bond, which tieth, knitteth and uniteth two hearts inseparably and maketh them one; insomuch that love itself so considered, to attain to the very purity and singularity thereof, is to endeavour and labour by all means whatsoever to the making of them Two hearts One, and to that one thing must all actions be directed. Inasmuch, I say, that such persons as will claim the right title of lovers, must neither be feared with dangers, nor driven back by force, nor chased with terrour, nor removed with reason, from endeavouring and working to make themselves deserve to be inseparably joyned with that which they love, and to become as the same thing it self, and one thing with it. Wherein I pray you cannot this be the onely and very force of love and not of lust? Very well Madam, quoth Perierio. So sir, quoth she, I pray you have you forgotten that you even now said, that you accounted all love not guided by reason, lust: which how grossely it was spoken, I will thus with one small example make you confess your self. Put case the Duke of Florence loveth some Lady either for her beauty, grace, comeliness, vertue, or other gifts by God and nature bestowed on her; which Lady he cannot enjoy as his own, I mean, have her heart united to his, as his is tied to

The Troublesome and Hard

to hers and be loved of her as he loveth her, (for there must be reciprocation in love) unless he spend all his Revenues, his Dukedome, and afterward, having obtained his hearts desire of her, and hath of her heart and his made but one, yet cannot enjoy her by reason of her parents, that for one reason or other would have her either married to some other, or rather not married at all then to him; and so lives still in body separated from her, though in heart and soul never but by her: his Duke do ne goes, and all his wealth consumed, thinking the jewel which he hath thereby gotten, of a higher price then all his substance, I mean the love of his Lady, being onely content with this, that she loves him. Now let me ask you this question would not reason, if the Duke had guided his love by the rational measure of his understanding, have counselled him not to lose his credit, his wealth, his renowen, and not to have undone himself for that which he might not fully enjoy (though he enjoyed as he desired? It may be so, Madam, quoth Periclio, but what then? Carry this (quoth she) Then his love was not guided by reason; yet there is no man that will, nay, can say, but that it was pure love, not spotted with the blot of any lust: and therefore against your former principle, are you forced to confess, that all love, not guided by reason, is not lust.

Periclio marking the subtilty of the Dutchess, in taking hold of his words and going about to canvas him that way, seeing she could not go through with her matter, which was to prove, that no love could be too extreame great, and that upright love was not to be guided or governed by reason; he unwilling to let her yet so carry it away, made answer thus: Many things may be spoken, which differs ways are to be understood. For sometimes things properly taken, are improperly applied to sundry purposes. And so when I said, that love not guided by reason, was lust; I understood not lust as it is properly taken for the carnal desire, and libidinous civility of flesh, but rather for the vice which is committed, by desiring that which ones affections urge him to covet and so harkening to the lure of his passions, boweth his will to their beck and

boweth

Adventures in Love.

oweth his will to will that which his affections wil: which may be and is improperly called lust also. For as properly it is so called by reason of the filthy desires of the flesh, so improperly is it so also called, for the desire of ones passions and affections; when one setteth aside the sound perswasion of reason, and applieth his will to follow that which his affections move him unto. And thus did I say, that all love not guided by reason was lust, in that they that so love do not what reason willet them, but what they list, and what the will of their affections as it were forceth them to do.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

How Perierio and Marcelio, with the rest of their company, taking leave of the Lady Felicia, departed.

The Lady Felicia hearing Perierio and the Dutchess so earnestly each stand to their own sayings, merrily brake up their gentle cabil, saying: I perceibe (Gentiles) if my Pymph had not ministred occasion of talk we had been very silent all supper time. But yet (quoth the Dutchess) with our rude discourse, it may be we have bred trouble to your ears and this company. Not to me truly (quoth Felicia.) Nor to us, I dare say for the rest (quoth Marcelio.) As for me (saith Alcida) I have conceived great delight in hearing the well agreeing strife between the two disputants; considering that though in words they disagreed, yet in sense, they both agree in one: as in speeches the Dutchess hath shewed, that love needeth not to respect reason, so in very deed hath she by example shewed, that she hath virtuously loved, & therefore her self guided her love with reason. And no doubt (quoth ancient Eugerio) where she saith, that love must not be tied to reason, her meaning is, that they which love, ought in such manner to pursue their love, that they do things which are beyond the common expectation of men; and indeed such things
as

The Troublesome and Hard

As may seem to be against reason, so long as they are not contrary to vertue: for considering, that the world have such as love, not to overturn vertue in my opinion she cannot be much discrepant from Perierio, in that he would have love guided by reason, meaning thereby that he would not have so excellent a thing as love is, disgraced with vice, which cannot be committed by the counsel or consent of reason.

Thus was supper time spent, which being ended and the cloth taken up by the Pymphs, the Lady Felicia with all the company walked out into the fields to recreate themselves, and take the evening air: which done the curtain of darkness being spread all over the air they were warned to return to the Palace, where they were all accompanied to their lodgings by the Pymphs. The next morning, Mirceio with his Alcida and her father Eugenio, and her brother and sister Pysdor and Cleonide took their leave of the Lady Felicia, yielding her as many thanks as they might, and departed thence to end their journey which they had taken to Lisbon, there to celebrate their marriage as they purposed when they took ship. In like manner, the beautifull shepherds Alexander and Ismenia, departed from the Lady Felicia to return home to their village, being glad they had so hapily met in that place.

Furthermore, Perierio now delivered from the furious passion that overturned his understanding before, merrily taketh leave of the company, and taketh his journey to Salamanca. The Dutchess Brissil remained with the Lady Felicia, until she heard some certainty of Perierio, which Felicia said would not be long. The rest of whose history, with the event thereof, what hapned to him before he was married to his and reigned King of Albion; with the success which Mirceio had, after he departed from Felicia to seek his Eleonora; and lastly, the adventures of Perierio, with the loves of his beautifull and noble sisters, Euphilia and Petra, after the death of their father Camillo, if almighty God give me life, I will write hereafter for y^e pleasure of my love. In the mean time I commit my self to their prayers, and them to the tuition of God.

F I N I S.

